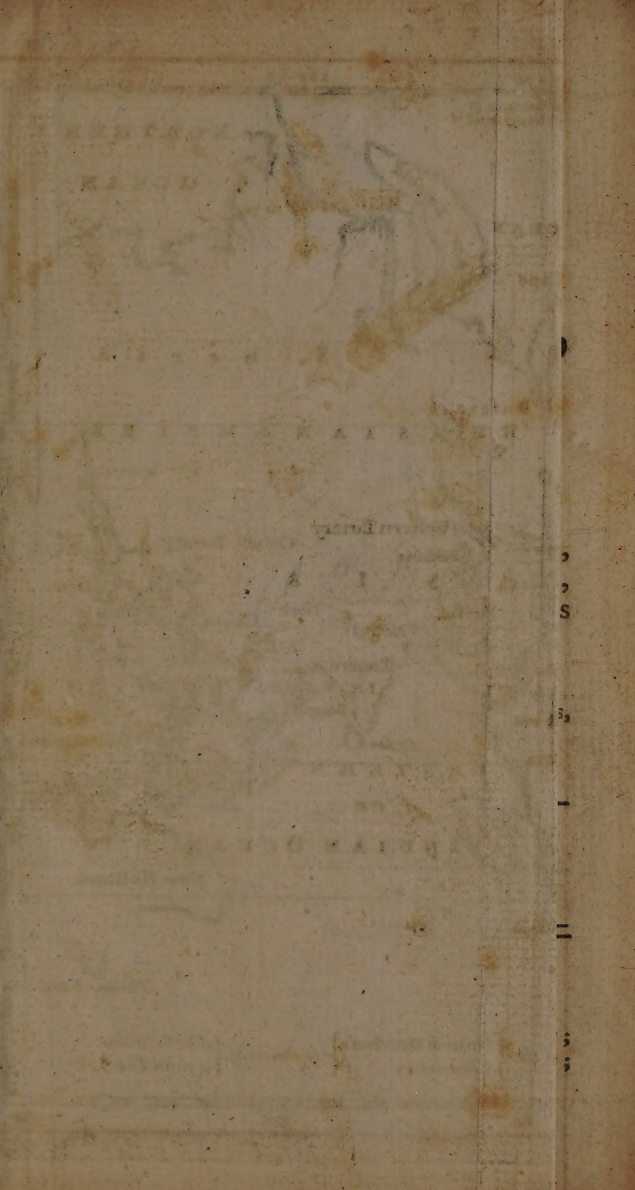


18540/B





A

COMPENDIUM

Of Authentic and Entertaining

VOYAGES,

Digested in a Chronological Series.

The whole exhibiting

A clear View of the CUSTOMS, MANNERS,
RELIGION, GOVERNMENT, COMMERCE,
and NATURAL HISTORY of most Nations
in the KNOWN WORLD.

Illustrated and adorned with a Variety of genuine Charts,
Maps, Plans, Heads, &c. curiously engraved.

V O L. VII.

L O N D O N:

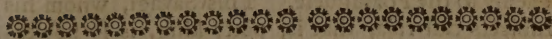
Printed for R. and J. DODSLEY; JO. RIVINGTON;
JA. RIVINGTON and J. FLETCHER; W. JOHNSTON;
W. STRAHAN; and T. JEFFERYS.

MDCCLVI.

8991



THE VOYAGE OF
A
COLLECTION
OF
VOYAGES.



CONTINUATION of the VOYAGE
of Dr. JOHN FRANCIS GEMELLI.

CHAP. XV.

The author's voyage to Goa, with a description of that city and its channel; and an account of the extent of the Portuguese dominions in India.

MONDAY the 21st the fleet sailed an hour before day: it consisted of thirty-six parangas, two galliots, which were admiral and vice-admiral, and four manchucas of war. These manchucas had a large main-sail, twelve oars, and four small guns, with fifteen Portuguese soldiers. The wind not being fair, they made but little way. Tuesday the 22^d, they anchored opposite to the city and fortress of Chaul, which is seated on a plain six miles from the sea, on the bank of a river, which at flood will carry

any vessels up to the city. A fort called El Morro secures the entrance of the harbour, built by the Portuguese in the year 1520. Jassi, then governor of Diu, sent fifty sail to obstruct the building of the fort: the fleets had several engagements, but always with loss to the Turks, so that at last they went back disabled.

Wednesday the 23d it was late before they sailed, waiting for some vessels of Chaul, and the wind failing, they made but little way. The calm continued Thursday 24th, and they were obliged to lie close by the coast of Savagi, who is a mortal enemy to the Portuguese. This Savagi, whom his subjects call raja, that is, petty king, is so powerful that he maintains war at one and the same time, with the great Mogul and the Portuguese: all the coast from Chaul to Goa, for the space of two hundred and fifty miles belongs to him. This prince's dominion is but of a late date, for it began with Savagi, grandfather of the present king. Savagi first raised his fortune by serving under the king of Golconda, then having gathered great wealth with the outlaws that resorted to him, he first seized some places that belonged to the king of Visapor, and fortifying themselves in them among the mountains, he at length gathered a mighty army, with which making war on the mogul, the Portuguese, and other princes his neighbours, he usurped all he now stands possessed of. His subjects are robbers both by sea and land, that being the pay he allows them; which makes it dangerous sailing along that coast, so that it is not to be done without a good convoy.

Voyages in these seas are likewise hazardous on account of the Malabars, who are pyrates of several nations, as Moors, Gentiles, Jews, and Christians, and fall upon all they meet, with a great number of boats full of men. They live under several monarchs,

narchs, of which the most powerful is the emperor Tamori, and the kings of Tanor, Porca, and others. These people take poor passengers, and lest they should have swallowed their gold, give them a potion, which makes them digest all they have in their bodies; which done, they search the stinking excrements to find the precious metal.

About sun-set, the north-west wind freshened and brought them in sight of Dabul. This city is seated six miles from the sea, and eight miles from Chaul, both in the kingdom of Decan. The Portuguese took it in the year 1508. But at present, it is subject to Savagi. Friday the 25th, they came in sight of the fort of Visapor, then they passed by Lambuna, and the fort of Maliandi. The wind freshning all night, on Saturday the 26th, at break of day, they came to an anchor in their port, having sailed two hundred and eighty miles from Chaul. The custom-house boats coming down the channel to visit them, overlooked Gemelli's baggage, as it was directed for the superior of the monastery at Goa. Being come to the city, he was courteously entertained by the said governor.

Goa is seated in the latitude of fifteen degrees twenty minutes, in an island nine leagues about, in the river Mandova, which falls into the sea six miles below; it is under the torrid zone, which the antients thought uninhabitable, by reason of the excessive heat of the sun, but providence has qualified it with continual rains, which fall plentifully from June till October; besides the skies are darkened whole weeks, with the thick clouds. When the rains cease at sun-rising, the heat is intolerable.

Alfonso de Albuquerque took Goa from Hidal-kan, without bloodshed in the year 1508. Hidal-kan afterwards re-took the city, but Albuquerque

recovered it again in 1510, with the slaughter of seven thousand barbarians, and built a fort there. Then, considering the goodness of the country, and commodious situation of the place, he constituted it the metropolis of the Portuguese empire in India. To establish his master Emanuel, in the possession, by gaining the love of the subjects, he moderated the tribute they payed to Hidalkan; and to breed up soldiers for the wars, he contrived that the Indian maids should be baptized and married to the Portuguese, that the Indians might be united to this nation by affinity, and consequently engaged to protect it. Goa, the center of all the Portuguese conquests, grew in wealth and renown, being become the key of all the trade of the east, and the chief mart of India. This plainly appears by the compass of its walls, which extend full twelve miles, with good bastions and redoubts. The houses are the best in India, but at present it does not contain above twenty thousand inhabitants of several nations, habits, and religions. There are the fewest of the Portuguese, who having got employments, leave Portugal and settle there. The Mestizos are the most numerous, and all those born of Portuguese men and Brachman women, have this name; about the fourth part of the people are mulattos, that is, born of whites and blacks.

The Canarines are as black as Ethiopians, but have long hair and broad faces. Many of them are priests, lawyers, attorneys, scriveners, &c. and very diligent in the service of their masters. Most of them are the offspring of Brachmans, Banians, and Churados, and these have good clear understandings, being apt to learn all sciences, sharp witted, ingenious and ready, and therefore every body endeavours to have some of them for their servants. On the contrary, the Langottis are the very reverse of

of the others; all Asia does not afford greater thieves and ruffians; they go naked, and till the land; fish, row, carry andoras, and follow such mean employments. Were it for the love of God, they led so miserable a life, they would be accounted living saints. They sleep naked day and night on the bare ground; they feed on a little rice swimming in the dish, never tasting bread as long as they live, unless they be extremely sick. All this proceeds from their laziness, for whenever they can procure any rice, they work no longer while that lasts. When they are well beaten, they understand a man's thoughts, and serve readily; but to give them fair words is time lost. Beating is so agreeable to them, that it makes a part of their amorous delight; for when they marry, the bride and bridegroom after they are a-bed, are so well threshed by their kindred and friends, that they are unfit for any business for some time.

Most of the citizens and merchants of Goa, are idolaters and Mahometans, who live in a quarter of the town apart, without any public use of their religion; there are abundance likewise of castes or blacks, for some Portuguese keep thirty or forty, and the least six or twelve, to carry their umbrella and andora, and their other mean employments; nor are they at any other charge to keep them, but a dish of rice at noon, and another at night; for they have no other garments but what they brought out of their mothers wombs. These blacks are supplied by the Portuguese ships from the coast of Africk, where they are bought for a trifle, being already captive slaves in their own country; nay, some in despair even sell themselves, and many would do this, did not they foolishly conceive, that at Goa, they make powder of them. As to their religion, they are idolaters, but are easily induced to embrace the catholic faith, there being no need

of many persuasions, for they presently yield, and readily consent to be baptized.

But those blacks we speak of, have some of them a noble and genteel disposition. D. Francisco de Taverno, earl of Alvor, being governor of Angola, the son of a neighbouring king came once to visit him, and understanding that the Portuguese were precise in matters of compliments, and that he should be received standing, as was accordingly done; he took along with him two slaves, well instructed what they were to do. Being come into the governor's room, and seeing no chair brought him, he caused his two slaves to squat down, and sat upon them. The Portuguese admired the caffre's ingenuity, and immediately ordered chairs to be brought. After the visit, the two slaves stayed in the count's house, and their master being told of it by the count's servants, that he might call them away; he answered, he did not use to carry away the chairs he sat on.

As their princes and gentry are endued with generous and noble thoughts, so the commonalty are courageous and cunning, for they, with poor weapons, overcome elephants and lions. To kill the first of these, they make a narrow path, along which, they, by means of several contrivances, drive the beast, and then dexterously wound it with javelins from off the trees. Others finding the elephant lying on the ground, get upon him and stab him with a long dagger, holding fast upon him till he is dead. They kill the lions for sport; for, when they see one astray in the woods, one of them advances with two small cudgels in his hand, and clapping one of them into the lion's paw, plays with the other; in the mean while, the next black to him, very dexterously takes the beast by the testicles, and then they beat him to death.

To return to Goa : its port is compared by Tavernier to the best in our continent, such as Constantinople and Toulon ; and to say the truth, besides what nature made it, the Portuguese have taken much pains to compleat and fortify it, by means of many castles and towers furnished with good cannon. Beyond the castles, the channel of the river grows narrower, sometimes to one sometimes to two miles ; and its banks, set out with the best fruit trees India affords, yield the finest prospect imaginable. This river that makes so noble a port, runs many miles up the country, dividing it into several fruitful islands and peninsulas.

Adjoining to this port, is that of Murmugon, formed by the other channel that runs between the island of Goa and peninsula of Salfette. These two channels, which meet at St. Laurence, make the length from east to west, of the island of Goa, which is twenty seven miles in compass, and contains thirty villages. Entering the port on the right hand, is the peninsula of Salfette, which is sixty miles about and twenty in length, containing fifty thousand souls, in thirty villages, where the jesuits administer the sacraments : on the left, is the other peninsula of Bardes ; it is fifteen miles long, and about forty-five in compass, with twenty-eight villages, governed in spirituals by the clergy.

The cathedral of Goa is a fine structure for India : it is very large, arched, divided into isles by twelve columns, and all curiously adorned with figures ; as are chapels. The archbishop's seat is in the chair, raised a great heighth above the ground. The palace is magnificent and spacious, with various galleries and noble apartments ; but the archbishop, for the conveniency of the cool air, lives by the side of the channel near the powder-house.

Here are four monasteries, namely that of the Recolets, with a small and beautiful church, and fine gardens; next that of St. Dominick, the church of which has three isles, made by six columns on a side. The arches are gilt, especially that of the choir, where gold glitters in every part. The monastery of St. Augustine is seated on a high ground that commands the city. A large ascent of steps leads up to the front of the church, where there are two high steeples, with great bells. Near this monastery is the college for novices, with a decent church and dwellings. The monastery of the Theatins is but small, yet has a very fine garden; and the church is built after the model of St. Andrew della velle in Rome. The jesuits college, called St. Rock, has a small church with six little chapels; but the house is large, and capable of seventy fathers. St. Monica, of the Augustinian nuns, is an arched church with three gilt altars. St. Paul is a church of the jesuits, and the first they founded in India; whence they took the name of Paulistas. In the garden there are two jaquia and some mango trees, planted by order of St. Francis Xavierius. There is also a chapel built in memory of the extasy or rapture, the saint had in that place, where the catechumens are instructed; for whose sustenance the king allows four hundred pieces of eight a year. In India, all Christians wear their beads about their necks like religious men. The jesuits, instead of a priest's cap, wear a long round one broad at the top.

On the bank of the channel are the monasteries and churches of St. Thomas of the Dominicans, and St. Bonaventure of the observants of St. Francis. The hospital of Goa is small and ill governed; tho' the king allows it four hundred pieces of eight a year. For this reason, and thro' the pestilential

tilential air of the country, there die thousands of sick persons in it, and particularly of wretched Portuguese soldiers. It is to be observed all the monasteries at Goa and throughout all the Portuguese dominions in India, have some allowance from the king, more or less, according to the number of religious.

The first of the Portuguese who ever sailed in India, was Vasco de Gama, a gentleman whose statue is over one of the gates of Goa. Gama had the title of general or admiral of four ships, three whereof were well fitted for war, and the fourth loaded with provisions; and being furnished with all necessaries for so long a voyage, he sailed from Lisbon on the 9th of July, 1497; a season, as was afterwards found by experience, most improper to go to India. At the Cape of Good Hope, he not only met with a severe storm, but his sailors, daunted with the dangers, and fearing greater if they went farther, conspired together to throw him overboard, and return home. Gama having intelligence of it, clapt the chief of the conspirators into irons, and sitting down himself at the helm, played both the parts of the captain and pilot, till he had weathered the cape. Then steering north-east, still coasting along Africa, this eastern Columbus came at last to the island of Mozambique, and then boldly crossing a gulph of two thousand five hundred miles, on the 18th of May, 1498, came to an anchor in a port thirty miles from Calicut, a city in the kingdom of Malabar, after ten months sail from Lisbon. Having, by repeated voyages, settled the means of getting the necessary supplies out of Europe, the Portuguese began to subdue the kingdoms of Decan, Cambaya, and Guzaratte, taking the forts of Diu, Cambaya, Surat, Damam, Trapor, Maim, Bazaim, Tana, Chaul, Dabul, and other places two

hundred miles along the coast. As also the islands of Goa, Salfette, Bardes, Andegiva, and others. Further on towards China, they made themselves masters of the important place of Malaco, of the Molucco islands, and the islands of Timor, building the colony of Macao, with the consent of the emperor of China. Their dominion also extended on the coast of Africa, over Angola, and Mosambique. This last is an island three miles in compass, and a mile in length, where the jesuits have only a garden of palm-trees. The fort is seated on the mouth of the channel; the castle has four good bastions, with seventy-four choice pieces of cannon. The merchandize brought to this port by the ships of the company, are bought at a set price by the royal factory, which afterwards sends them to Chilimani, the mouth of the river Sennas. From Chilimani, the goods are sent up the river against the stream in little boats. Cafres resort to this port from provinces and kingdoms, three or four months journey distant, to buy or take up goods upon trust for so much gold, which they never fail to bring punctually the next year, unless death prevent them. This trade yields above cent. per cent. so that the Portuguese may be said to have another India in Africa.

Senna is a little town on the right hand of the river, inhabited by thirty Portuguese families, who make it populous enough by the great number of blacks they keep. On the same coast, fifteen days journey from Mosambique, they have the port of Zofala; and in Arabia Felix, they once had the important place of Mascatte, and its dependances. The kingdom of Ormuz, and several islands in the Persian gulph, and the city of Bassora, which still pays five thousand five hundred crowns and a horse yearly tribute to the king of Portugal, but when
their

their fleet does not appear powerful in the gulph, the Mahometans refuse to pay.

They also made themselves masters of the kingdom of Canara, of the forts of Onor, Brazalor, and Cambolin; and in the island of Ceylon, three of the seven provinces were brought under their dominion; and this by the last will of Acola, who was sovereign thereof. They likewise subdued the city and fort of Negapalan in the kingdom of Madure, Tambulin in the kingdom of Bengal, and Macassar in the kingdom of that name. So that being formidable to all the princes of Asia, they had made all the country about tributary, and being sovereigns of that vast ocean by means of their mighty fleets, no ship of any nation whatsoever could sail those seas without their leave and pass. These conquests gained at the expence of many lives, and with the effusion of much blood, scarce lasted an age and a half; for the Dutch falling into the Indian trade, instead of extending their conquests among so many islands and kingdoms of Mahometans and Pagans, only robbed the Portuguese of what they had gained with so many dangers and sufferings.

Another cause of the decay of the Portuguese power in India, was their conquest of Brazil; for finding more profit there, they slighted India. This is so certain, that the king of Portugal was several times in the mind absolutely to abandon it, which had certainly been done, had not the missionaries made him sensible that if he did so, all the Christians of those countries would again fall into Idolatry and Mahometanism.

If we look upon what remains to the Portuguese at present in India, it is very inconsiderable, and instead of being profitable, scarce pays its own charge. Those that envy their honour, ascribe their losses to their want of zeal for religion, and

their not persisting long in the propagation of it; but the chief cause of their ruin was their having made so many conquests so far divided from one another; and next the war at home, which obstructed the relieving of India.

All that remains under the Portuguese dominion from the Cape of Good Hope, to Mucao in China, is governed by a vice-roy, with the title of captain general, who resides at Goa, as the metropolis of India. There are six or eight desembargadores, or judges, that attend the government as a sovereign court or council. They wear golillas, and huge periwigs, after the French fashion. They administer justice in civil and criminal cases, having power over all ministers, and an ultimate determination of all appeals brought from any parts of the dominions. The vice-roy sits as chief of this court under a canopy.

The inquisition is much respected and dreaded by the Christians at Goa, and about it, as is the archbishop or primate. And not only the vice-roy, with all the officers civil and military, but churchmen, have sufficient allowance from the king to maintain them handsomely; the vice-roy's salary is ten thousand pieces of eight, the archbishop has four hundred thousand, the officers of the inquisition, canons, monasteries, and parishes, a competency; but all the tythes belong to the king.

In the neighbourhood of Goa, are found all the several sorts of fruits growing on the whole coast of Indostan, therefore, before we leave that city, we shall give a short account of the most remarkable. To begin then with the coco tree, as that which is most beneficial to man. This tree is supposed to be able to fit out and load a ship for sea, without borrowing any thing elsewhere; of the leaves are made the sails, of the wood the vessel;

fel; the fruit yields meat and drink, and a good commodity; besides its outward case or rind is spun to make all necessary cordage for a vessel. The shell, which is hard, makes dishes to drink chocolate and for other uses; within it, is a white pulp or nut, sticking round the shell about half an inch thick, which tastes like an almond; in the midst of it is a clear water, very wholesome to drink. Of this same fruit they make several sorts of sweet-meats, and an oyl, both to burn and eat for want of olives. Thus the coco-trees yield the best revenue in India, because the country does not produce much rice, cotton, or corn. They grow strait to sixty spans heighth, of an equal thickness from the bottom to the top.

The palm or date-tree in India, bears no fruit, but they draw two kinds of juice from them, which they call nira and fura; one kind called de tranfolin, bears three small nuts in a triangle, the pulp whereof pressed, yields a cold white water. This tree grows as high as the coco, but is thicker of leaves; which grow like a broom. The monkey coco-tree, has boughs like large disciplines. Of the fruit they make curious beads, having a natural work upon them, than which nothing more curious could be made by art. The arequeira or areca-tree, is like the palm, but slenderer and not so high; it bears a sort of fruit necessary for chewing with the betle, and it is gathered four or five times a year. The figueira or fig-tree, is a plant as soft as a bulrush, as thick as a man's thigh, and between fifteen and twenty spans high, with leaves above a quarter broad, which the Indians use for dishes, and have new ones every meal. It bears fruit but once, for when it has produced sixty, seventy, and sometimes a hundred figs on a branch, they cut down the plant, and a young sprout grows out again; there are two sorts

of them, which ripen at any time of the year; the first about a span long, and about the thickness of an egg, are called roasting figs. The other sort are called garden-figs, which are not so large as the other, but are very sweet and eaten raw. The manguera or mango-tree, is as high as a good pear-tree, but has larger and softer leaves; the mango it bears is weighty and flat, and hangs downward by a long stalk; without they are green, and the pulp within the shell is white and yellow. There are several sorts of them, and variously tasted. The carambola-tree is as big as a plum-tree, and bears such a leaf. The fruit when ripe, is white within and yellow without, shaped like a lemon, and in taste much the same; they preserve them because they are cooling. The anona-tree is very large, and produces fruit in March and April; which are as big as a pear, red and yellow without, whitish within, and full of a soft pleasant substance which is eaten with a spoon. The ata-tree is as big as an apple-tree, but with small leaves; the fruit is like that of the pine-tree, green without, and within white and soft, so that it is eaten with a spoon. The capis-tree is not very tall, but thick of boughs and leaves; the fruit is singular in this from all others, as having its stone not in the middle but upon the top, raised like a green crest; smelling to which, the Portuguese missionaries affirm very much helps the memory. Cutting it in quarters, steeping it in cold water, and then chewing it, there comes from it a cool juice good for all obstructions in the breast. The jumbolon-tree grows wild, and has the leaves like a lemon-tree; but the fruit is so delicious that an Indian woman coming to Lisbon loathed all the best fruit in Europe, remembering her beloved jumbolon. They hang on the boughs like cherries or olives, and have the red colour

colour like the one, and the shape and stone like the other. The jangoma-tree is very large, all prickly, and with small leaves; the fruit is of the shape of a walnut, and of a sourish and bitterish taste, like a medlar. The brindon-tree is as tall as a pear-tree, but has smaller leaves, the fruit resembles golden pippens, but the rind is harder. The caranda-tree is low and thorny, with leaves like an orange-tree; the fruit is no other than the wild grapes of Indostan. The jaqua-tree is as big as a laurel, with green and yellow leaves. The fruit it produces, is the biggest in the world, for no man can carry above one of them; and some of them are four spans long, and a span and a half diameter. It being impossible for the boughs to bear such a weight, nature has providently ordered it should grow out at the foot of the tree. The rind is yellow and green, but prickly, and with some stiff points like those about the collars of mastiffs. Within it, are many yellow separations like those in an orange, with each of them a kernel in it like an acorn; which roasted, tastes like a chesnut. The cinnamon-tree, tho' it bears no fruit, is precious for its bark, which being taken off, grows on the tree again, to yield the owner more profit. The amcale-tree is as big as a pear-tree; the fruit grows out of the thick part of the branches, its shape is like a golden pippen, with streaks like a lemon on the outside. The anana is a plant like our house-leek, bearing a fruit round and prickly, a span long, and above a span diameter; rising like a very great artichok. It is sometimes gathered before it is ripe, and made very sweet with sugar and so sent into Europe. It is wholesome, but so hot, that if a knife be left sticking in it a day, it loses its temper, and is spoiled. The mogareira is a plant, which, from February to the end of May, bears a most beautiful white flower, with a
smell

smell much more fragrant than that of jessamin. Several plants of it have been sent to Lisbon in earthen pots for some Portuguese lords, and it very well deserves to be in any royal garden, upon account of the great beauty of its flower. The asafreira is bigger than a plum-tree, and produces saffron; in this tree the flowers come out in the night, and almost all the year round. The pimenteira is but a low plant, which grows against any tree or wall, and bears the pepper in clusters like grapes; when ripe it is red, but the Indians burn and make it black, that it may not serve for seed elsewhere. The beteleira is a tender plant like ivy, which runs up a stick; its leaf is the delight of the Asiatics, for men and women, from the prince to the peasant, delight in nothing more than chewing it all day in company. The Spaniards make a composition of it with areca, and carry it in curious little boxes to chew it every moment abroad and at home. The betel makes the lips so fine, red, and beautiful, that if the European ladies could, they would purchase it for the weight in gold.

The trees hitherto described, are the best in Indostan, but there are many more not to be despised. One called puna, so strait and tall, that it may serve for masts for ships. There are also Indian apples, and plenty of tamarinds about the fields. The plant called padolim, produces a slightly flower, and a long fruit like a cucumber, and there is a white fruit growing under ground like potatoes, but much bigger and weighing many pounds; when boiled, it is better than potatoes. There are many more sorts of fruit besides those here mentioned, as well of the country as brought from Persia and Europe.

C H A P. XVI.

The author's journey to Galgala, where the great Mogul was incamped, with an account of the magnificence of that king, and the manners of the mogulstuns.

GEMELLI having resolved, ever since his first setting out, to see the court and camp of the great mogul, without regarding danger or expence, in order to it, he hired a begarine to carry his provisions for some days, and utensils for dressing of meat, being sure to find nothing by the way; and as the begarine could not speak the language of the moguls, he likewise hired a boy of Golconda, who, besides his mother tongue, had learned Portuguese. This done, he committed his baggage to F. Hippolito Visconti, desiring him, during his absence, to change his money into pieces of eight, to serve him when he came back in his voyage to China.

Friday the 4th, the interpreter and porter coming to tell him all was ready, he set out, leaving his own servant in the monastery. The pass of Daudi, where he was to take boat for Ponda, was stopt by order of the archbishop, who governing during the vice-roy's absence, had directed that no person should pass into the infidels country, without his particular leave; but as soon as Gemelli spoke to him, he gave him a pass under his own hand. Having crossed the channel, they stayed a long while in a cottage belonging to the guards, there being neither man nor beast to be found, to carry the baggage of an Armenian and a Moor who had joined him; at last seeing night draw on, they forced some gentiles of the village of Arcolna, to
carry

carry them ; they passed the night under some coco trees, without sleep, because of the great noise of drums, and cries of the idolaters, who celebrated the feast of Simingo, at the full moon.

Saturday the 5th, before they set out, the Armenian and Moor filled their bellies with cachiari, which is a composition of rice, kidney-beans, and lentils pounded and boiled together ; and for want of beasts to carry his luggage to Ponda, which was twelve miles off, Gemelli took three gentiles, and was forced against his will to make use of a cudgel upon them. The sun was so hot, that at very short distances they were obliged to rest, and refresh themselves with melons, and fruit of the country ; on their road, lay the village of Mardol, where there is a famous pagod. The way into the court, is over a covered bridge of three arches, up to which, there are two stair-cases ; on the right of this court, is an octangular structure, consisting of seven rounds of small columns with handsome capitals. About the porch, and before the arches of the foresaid bridge, there are several shops, but all is gone to ruin since the mogul has taken that country from the king of Visapor. The pagod is at the further end of the court. The first room is like a little hall, longer than it is broad ; within it is another room, and further on upon the right, is a little room curiously painted, with several figures, one of which has four hands, two whereof hold a staff, one a looking-glass, and the other rests on its side ; there are besides, several monsters, beasts, and birds. Behind the pagod, is one of the banian trees, and under it the bath or pool, with large stone steps about, for the idolaters to go down and wash them of their uncleanness.

Setting forward from this place, after travelling a long time over mountains and plains, they came late

late and very weary to Ponda. There Gemelli found a small camp of the mogul's forces, and among them Francis de Mirando, who received him very civilly. These troops came that same day from Bichiolin with the divan, or receiver of the king's revenue at Ponda. Seven hundred horse and foot stood at their arms before the divan's tent, and two companies of sixteen gentiles, each danced confusedly to the sound of drums, fifes, and trumpets. The divan, who was a grey headed old man about sixty years of age, mounted a horseback, with a pair of kettle drums a horseback before him, another pair of kettle drums on a camel, and a medly of horse and foot naked, who went in a disorderly manner like so many goats. The divan being come to a tent erected for that purpose, he alighted, and saluting the king's messenger, who brought him a vest, and a commission to take possession of the government of the lower fort of Ponda, he put on the chira himself on his head, whilst the messenger held the sash to him. Then the latter took a vest of grey silk with gold stripes, and put it on the divan, and then two sashes about his neck, his scymiter hanging by his side. The divan laid his hand on the ground five times, and as often on his head in thanksgiving to the king, who had honoured him with that present. It was said this honour cost him twenty thousand rupees, or two thousand five hundred pound, which he sent to the secretary, who passed the commission, as the grand mogul himself never writes to his subjects.

The city of Ponda is made up of cottages and mud houses, seated in the midst of many mountains. The fort, which is also of earth, has a garrison of about four hundred horse and foot, and seven small pieces of cannon. The country depending on it, taken from Savagi by the great mogul, is governed by a suba or general of the field, who receives

receives the revenue of seven hundred villages, for which he is obliged to maintain a certain number of soldiers, so that he drains the poor country people, making a few cottages sometimes pay thousands of rupees.

Monday the 7th, in the afternoon, Gemelli saw the dismal spectacle of a Pagan woman, who was burned with the dead body of her husband, according to their wicked unmerciful custom. She came out well clad, and adorned with jewels, as if she had gone to be married, with music playing and singing, being attended by the kindred of both sexes, friends, and brachman priests. Being come to the place appointed, she went about undaunted, taking leave of them all; after which, she was laid all along with her head on a block, in a cottage twelve spans square, made of small wood, wet with oil, but bound to a stake that she might not run away with the fright of the fire. Lying in this posture, chewing betle, she asked of the standers by, whether they had any business by her to the other world, and having received several gifts, and letters, from those ignorant people to carry to their dead friends, she wrapped them up in a cloth; this done, the brachman, who had been encouraging her, came out of the hut, and caused it to be fired.

There being no other conveniency of carriage all the way but on oxen, Gemelli bought a horse at Ponda for sixty rupees, and having got a pass from the bacheir, that he might not be stopped by the guards on the frontiers, likewise leaving his gun to be sent back to Goa, that he might not be made prisoner by Savagi's men, he set out on Tuesday the 8th, and travelling eight miles, came to Chiampon, a village of a few mud-houses. Here he caused some meat to be dressed; but his porter going to take a fig leaf to use instead of a dish, after

the manner of India, the heathen woman to whom the fig-tree belonged, and the rest of the people who came to her assistance, made such a noise that they were forced to depart; from thence they travelled thro' woods, and afterwards crossing over an arm of the sea in a small boat, they entered the territories of a pagan prince, lord of some villages among the mountains, but tributary and subject to the great mogul; at the end of four miles, they lay at the village of Kakore, consisting of a few cottages; at night troops of monkeys came leaping from one tree to another, and some of them with their young ones so close hugged under their belly, that tho' they threw many stones at them, they could not fetch down one. These monkeys are very greedy of coco nuts, which has taught the Indians a method of catching them. They make a hole in the shell, into which the monkey runs his paw, and not being able to fetch it out full of the nut, rather than quit the hold, it suffers itself to be taken by those that lie in wait.

On Wednesday the 9th, they set out thro' thick woods, and travelling eight cosses or sixteen Italian miles, they came to the foot of the mountain of Balagati, where the guards and the custom-house officers took twelve rupees for two strings of pearls. Having climbed the mountain for eight miles among dreadful thick woods, the second guard and custom-house took a rupee without examining farther. There being no dwelling to be found, they took up their lodging that night in the thickest part of the wood, after having travelled twelve cosses.

On Thursday the 10th, the bojata set out three hours before day, and they went along with it for the more safety. This bojata was a caravan of above three hundred oxen, loaded with provisions for the camp at Galgala. Near their road, appeared

peared some wild hens, which at first seemed tame; but still kept at a great distance. Having travelled fourteen cosses, they came two hours before sunset to the village of Bombnali, where tho' there was a guard, they took nothing from them. The road they travelled on Friday the 11th, was thro' more open woods, in which there was iron mines; and after having gone eight cosses, they came to the village of Chiamkan, where there was a custom-house, which searched their luggage. Here the prince of the territory resides in a fort made of earth, encompassed with walls seven spans high.

Setting out late on Saturday the 12th, after four miles travel, they came into the mogul's territories, and rested till noon near the town of Alcal, but being ready to set forwards, they were informed, the road they were to go was infested with robbers, therefore they resolved to stay for the bojata. At this place there was a pagod, and in it an idol, with a human body, but the face of a monkey, and a very long tail winding about the top of its head, with a little bell hanging at the end of it. One hand was on its side, and the other lifted up as it were to strike.

On Sunday the 13th, they set out four hours before day with the caravan of oxen, and at the end of six cosses, came to the little village of Kankre, then proceeding three long cosses farther, they lay at the village of Etchi; next day setting out early, with another bojata, and after travelling eight cosses thro' a very fertile soil, they lodged at the little village of Onor. On Tuesday the 15th, they travelled fifteen cosses, thro' a country full of green and delightful trees, to the city of Manduppeer, and after dinner two cosses farther to Betcher, a walled town, where they lay.

It is far different travelling thro' the mogul's country, than thro' Persia or Turkey, for there
are

are no beasts for carriage to be found, nor caravans at convenient distances, nor provisions; and, what is worse, there is no safety from thieves. He, therefore, that has not a horse of his own, must mount upon an ox, and at night the clear sky will be all his covering, or else a tree. Add to all this, the great danger from the excursions of Savagi's foldiers, and the Mogulstans themselves, who are such crafty thieves, that they reckon a traveller's money and cloaths their own, and will keep along with him many days, till his security gives them an opportunity to rob him at their ease. 'Tis true, that this of Visapor, is the worst for travelling of all the kingdoms subject to the great mogul, as it is continually harrassed with wars.

On Wednesday the 16th, they travelled three cosses to a village called Kodelci, and three from thence to Edoar, the biggest city in the whole journey. All the merchants that come from the southern parts to sell their goods, use to stay here, and afterwards go over to the camp like retailers. When they passed that way, this city was actually infested with the plague. After dinner, they went five cosses farther, to the town of Muddol, seated on the bank of a river, a matter of great consideration on a road where there are no cisterns, and very few springs.

On Thursday the 17th, after riding five cosses, they passed thro' a walled town called Matur, and two cosses farther to the village of Galgala, where the mogul's camp was, and coming into the quarters of the Mahometans, called Lascars, some Christian foldiers of Agra entertained them. Next day, Gemelli went to the Christian gunner's quarter to hear mass, and found a convenient chapel of mud walls, served by two Canarine priests. After mass, Francis Borgia, by extraction a Venetian, and captain of the Christians, invited him to his house.

house. That same day, the king put the question to the *casí* or judge of the law, whether it was more for God's service to go fight his enemies, to spread the Mahometan sect, or to go over to Vísapor to keep their ramazan or lent. The *casí* required time to answer, which pleased the mogul, who was a great dissembler.

On Saturday the 19th, Gemelli went to Gulalbar or the king's quarters, and found the king was then giving audience, but there was such a multitude and confusion, that he could not have a good sight of him. His tents, together with the princes, took up three miles in compass, and were defended every way with palisadoes, ditches, and five hundred falconets. There were three gates into them, one for the *aram* or women, and two for the king and his court. The forces in his camp were said to amount to sixty thousand horse, and a hundred thousand foot; for whose baggage there were fifty thousand camels, and three thousand elephants; but that the *futlers*, merchants, and artificers, were much more numerous, the whole camp being a moving city, containing four million of souls, and abounding not only in provisions, but in all things that could be desired. In short, the whole camp was a moving city, of thirty-six miles in compass.

The *omrahs* or generals are obliged to maintain a certain number of horse and foot at their own expence, but the mogul assigns them the revenues of countries and provinces, while they continue in that post; some of them make a million and a half a year of these *feofs*. But the princes of the blood have the best, some of which are worth a million and a half of rupees a month. They are not only obliged to serve in war, but to attend the king at all times; for upon every failure a *gari* is taken from them, which is three thousand
nine

nine hundred rupees; or less proportionably to their pay. Tho' these generals are in so fair a way to heap up wealth, yet they need not; because when they die, the exchequer is their heir; and only a bare substance is allowed the wife, and for the children, they say the king will bestow more riches on them, than he did on their father, whenever their faithful services shall deserve it.

These omrahs command each his own troops, without being subordinate to another, only obeying a lieutenant of the king when he is absent. Many Frenchmen belonging to the army, said it was a diversion to serve the mogul, because they that will not fight, or do not keep their guards, are only punished by losing that day's pay, that they are convicted of having transgressed. On the other side, there being no prince in the world that pays his soldiers better, a stranger that goes into his service soon turns rich, but once in it, is very difficult to get a discharge any other way than by making an escape. They are supplied with horses for the army from Persia and Arabia, at a thousand or five hundred rupees each; and as no barley grows in Indostan, they give them four pounds of boiled lentiles a day, and in winter they add half a pound of butter, and four ounces of pepper. The expence of maintaining so many elephants is very great, for every one of them eats at least a hundred and forty pounds of corn every day, besides leaves, green canes, sugar and pepper; so that the king allows seven rupees a day for each one.

On Sunday the 20th, there were about two thousand soldiers horse and foot, drawn up at the tent of Scialam, the king's eldest son waiting to attend him to his father's quarters. The son came out and mounted on horseback to go to pay his respects,

and as soon as he saw his father, he alighted. He was about sixty-five years of age, tall, and full bodied, with a thick long beard, which began to be grey.

On Monday the 21st, by means of a Christian of Agra, Gemelli had the fortune to be admitted to a private audience of the king. In the first court of the king's quarters in a large tent, were many kettledrums, trumpets, and other musical instruments; there was also a gold ball betwixt two gilt hands, hanging by a chain, which is the imperial ensign; and when they march, it is mounted on an elephant. He past on into the second court, and then into the royal tents, where finding the king seated after the country manner, on rich carpets and pillars embroidered with gold, he made his obeisance after the mogul fashion, and drew near, the same Christian being interpreter. He asked him of what kingdom of Europe he was, how long he had been from thence, where he had been, and what he came to his camp for, whether he would serve him, and whither he designed to go. Gemelli answered his questions, but told him affairs of the greatest importance called him home after he should see the kingdom of China. He was then dismissed, the time of the public audience drawing near. The tent for this purpose was supported by two great poles, the outside covering being ordinary red stuff, but within, were small taffeta curtains: at one end, was a square place raised four spans above the ground, enclosed with silver banisters two spans high, and covered with fine carpets; in the middle of this platform, was another place raised a span higher, at the angles whereof were four poles, covered with silver, reaching to the top of the tent. Here stood the throne, which was also square, of gilt wood, three spans above the rest; to get up to it, there was a little silver footstool.

footstool. The king soon appeared leaning on a staff forked at the top; several omrahs and courtiers going before him. He was of a low stature, with a large nose, slender, and stooping with age. The whiteness of his round beard was more visible on his olive-coloured skin. The people that had business drawing near, two secretaries standing took their petitions, which they delivered to the king, telling him the contents. The king endorsed them with his own hands without spectacles; and by his chearful smiling countenance, seemed to be pleased with the employment.

In the mean while, the elephants were reviewed, that the king might see what condition they were in. When the rider had uncovered the elephant's crupper, for the king to view it, he made him turn his head towards the throne, and make his submission three times by lifting up and lowering down his trunk. Then came Scialam's son and grandson, who having twice made their obeisance, sat down on the first floor of the throne on the left. Those that were not of the blood royal, made three obeisances.

On the right hand without the tent, stood a hundred musketeers, and as many mace-bearers, who had clubs on their shoulders, with silver globes at the ends. On the left of the tent, were the royal ensigns held upon spears by nine persons, clad in vests of crimson velvet, all adorned with gold, with wide sleeves, and sharp collars hanging down behind. Without the enclosure of the royal tents, several companies and troops of horse and foot stood at their arms, and elephants with vast standards, and kettle-drums on them, which were beaten all the time. When the audience was over, the king withdrew in the same order he came out, so did the princes, some getting into palankines,

and others mounting stately horses covered with gold.

It is well known that the succession to this great monarchy rather depends on force than right, but this mogul we have spoken of, added fraud to force, by which he destroyed not only his brothers, but his father. Scia-Gehan, after he was seventy years of age, forty of which he had reigned, became desperately in love with a Moorish young woman. His unruly passion prevailing, he gave himself up so entirely to her, that being reduced to extream weakness, he shut himself for three months in the aram, without once shewing himself to the people. He had four sons and two daughters: the eldest of his sons was called Dara, the second Sugiah, the third Aureng-Zeb, and the last Morad Baksee. Scia-Gehan seeing his sons married, grown powerful, aspiring to the crown, and consequently enemies to one another; after much thinking, for fear they should kill one another before his face, he resolved to remove them from court. He sent Sugiah into the kingdom of Bengal, Aureng-Zeb into that of Decan, Moran Baksee into Gufaratte, and to Dara he gave Cabul and Multan. The three first went away and acted like sultans in their governments, keeping to themselves all the revenues, and maintaining armies under colour of awing the subjects. Dara being the eldest, and designed for empire, remained at court, and his father even permitted all orders to pass thro' his hands. Upon Scia-Gehan's shutting himself up, a report prevailed that he was dead: the sons upon hearing this, immediately armed to contend for their father's kingdom. Aureng-Zeb, whilst things were in this confusion, dissembled his ambition, and professed to renounce all worldly concerns, and become a fakhir or mendicant to serve God in peace. At the same time he wrote to his brother Morad, that

that as he was remarkable for valour, and his other two brothers had forsaken the religion of their ancestors, Dara being an idolater, and Sugiah a heretic, he advised him to assume the throne, and promised him all his assistance, provided he would give him his word, that when he came to the kingdom, he would leave him in peace to pray to God all the rest of his days. In token of his affection, he sent him one hundred thousand rupees, advising him to come with all expedition to make himself master of Surat, where the treasure was. Morad, trusting to the professions of Aureng-Zeb, willingly accepted of his assistance, as he was neither very powerful nor rich himself. Dara attending his father in his illness, forbore to oppose them at first, and contented himself with having driven back Sujah, the other pretender to Bengal. On the other side, Aureng-Zeb brought over one of the generals of Scia-Gehan, who was besieging Kalliana, to favour his party; and Morad Baksee in the mean time having taken Surat, the two armies joined with much satisfaction, and marched directly for Agra. Dara, alarmed at this and seeing the great danger that threatened him, marched out with the forces that continued faithful to the mogul, to oppose their passing the river Agene; in the first engagement eight thousand of his forces, and three of his generals were slain; Aureng-Zeb and Morad, flushed with this success, encouraged their men to a second action, and gave out that they had thirty thousand moguls of their party among Dara's forces. Accordingly they fought a second battle at Samongher, where, after an obstinate dispute, the victory was at last decided in favour of Aureng-Zeb, by the treachery of one of Dara's commanders, who deserted him in the time of the action with thirty thousand men, after having advised him to come down from his elephant, which making

his soldiers believe that he was dead, occasioned their final defeat. Four days after, Aureng-Zeb and Morad came to a garden, a small league from Agra, and thence sent an ingenious and trusty eunuch to pay their respects to Scia-Gehan, and to tell him they were very much troubled at all that had happened, being compelled to it by Dara's ambition, but were most ready to obey his commands. Scia-Gehan, tho' he well knew how eager his son was to reign, thought proper to dissemble, and invited Aureng-Zeb to a visit, wanting to entrap him without coming to open force; but he, thoroughly skilled in all frauds, took his father in the same snare; for, putting off the visit from day to day, he spent the time in gaining the affections of the omrahs underhand, and when he thought things were ripe, he sent his son to the fort on pretence to speak with Scia-Gehan, who no sooner entered, but he attacked the guard, made himself master of the walls, and sent the keys of the fort to his father. Aureng-Zeb presently shut up the old king with his daughter and all the women; and all the omrahs declaring for him, he took what he thought fit out of the king's treasure, and marched against Dara. On their march, his brother Morad at an entertainment getting drunk with wine, he upbraided him as unfit for being a king, and ordered him to be imprisoned in a wooden house set on an elephant, and so conveyed to Dehli, to the little fort seated in the middle of the river. Having thus secured Morad, he pursued Dara, leaving his son to destroy Sujah. But Mahmud aspiring at those things he ought not yet to have aimed at, fell under the suspicion of his father, who caused him to be arrested upon the river Ganges, and sent close shut up to Gaveloer; after having done this, he sent to warn his other son to continue in his duty. Then going

to Dehli he began to act as king, and while his general pressed Sujah, he contrived to get Dara in his power by fraud. Who, when he was come to the gate of the city, was set scurvily clad, with his wife and son, on a pitiful elephant, and so carried thro' the streets, and afterwards killed. Likewise perceiving there were poems handed about in commendation of Morad Bakfee's valour, it raised such a jealousy in him, that he caused him to be put to death. There now only remained sultan Sujah, who, tho' he held out some time in Bengal, yet was at last forced to submit to his brother's power and good fortune, his army being entirely routed, and he himself obliged to fly, some say to Persia, others elsewhere, so that Aureng-Zeb said in jest, Sujah was turned pilgrim.

The unnatural war being thus at an end, after it had lasted five years, Aureng-Zeb was nevertheless opposed by the steadiness of the grand cadi, who was to put him in possession, but objected, according to the law of Mahomet and of nature, no man could be declared king whilst his father was yet living, much less Aureng-Zeb, who had put to death his elder brother Dara. To overcome this difficulty, he assembled the doctors of the law, and told them that his father, by reason of age, was unfit to rule; and to these reasons he made the Mahometan casuists agree, that he deserved the crown, and ought to be declared king. But the cadi still opposing him, he was deposed, and another put in his place, who, for the kindness received, consented to all that was required of him. Aureng-Zeb accordingly coming to the mosch on the 20th of October, 1660, seated himself on the richest throne that ever was in the world, being the same that was begun by Tamerlane, and finished by Scia-Gehan, receiving there the homage of all the great men.

But reflecting afterwards on the heinousness of the crimes he had committed for the compassing of his ends, he voluntarily imposed upon himself a rigorous abstinence, not to eat for the future any wheaten bread, fish, or flesh, and to live upon barley-bread, rice, herbs, sweet-meats, and such things, nor to drink any sort of liquor but water.

Ambassadors from the chief princes of Asia and Africa came to congratulate his accession to the crown; but the king of Persia sent him a letter, upbraiding him with the murder of Dara, and imprisonment of Scia-Gehan; and reflecting upon him for the title he had assumed of *alem guire*, that is, lord of the world, concluded his letter with these words, "Since you are *alem guire*, I send you a sword and horses that we may meet."

These are the methods of securing the throne of Indostan, not found out by any ill custom of that people, but proceeding from the want of good laws concerning the title of birth-right; therefore every prince of the blood thinks he has a sufficient claim to the crown, and exposing himself to the cruel necessity of overcoming to reign, sometimes involves an infinite number of lives in his own ruin, that another may be the more securely established.

The vast empire of the mogul, which in the Indian language signifies white, contains all the country between the rivers Indus and Ganges. It borders on the east with the kingdoms of Aracan, Tipa, and Assen; on the west with Persia, and the Usbeck Tartars; on the south of it is the great Indian ocean, and some countries held by the Portuguese and other petty kings; and on the north it reaches to mount Caucasus and the country of Zagotay. The first that laid the foundation of this mighty monarchy was Tamerlane, otherwise Teymur, who, by his wonderful conquests from India

to Poland, far surpassed the renown of all former commanders. He had one leg shorter than the other, and was therefore called the Lame; he was not of mean extraction, as some imagine, but of the race of Scia-Quis-Cham king of Tartary; and born at Samarcand, a country of Zagotay, or of the Usbeck Tartars, where he was afterwards buried. After a succession of nine princes of the same blood, the throne was now filled by Aureng-Zeb, who added to the empire the kingdoms of Visapor and Golconda, part of the territory of Savagi, and other petty principalities of Indostan.

Aureng-Zeb laboured to gain the reputation of being a strict observer of the Mahometan law, and a lover of justice. He had so distributed his time that he could scarce ever be said to be idle: some days in the week he bathed before break of day; then having prayed, he ate something; after that, having spent two hours with his secretaries, he gave public audience before noon, and then prayed again: this done he dined, and then gave audience again, when followed the third or fourth time of praying. Next, he was employed in the affairs of his family till two hours after it was dark; then he supped, and slept only two hours, after which he took the alcoran and read till break of day. This might serve for an example to many princes in Europe, who, giving themselves up to sloth and voluptuousness, neglect the duties of their charge, and are only remarkable for intemperance and wickedness.

After Aureng-Zeb had prescribed himself this sort of life, he ceased to be bloody as before, and on the contrary, became so mild, that the omrahs and governors did not pay him the duty they owed, knowing his mercy would never suffer him to punish them. A government far different from that of Turkey, where the stain of disobedience is wash-

ed away with blood. Even in his youth he did not give himself up to sensual pleasures, as his predecessors had done, tho', according to their barbarous custom, he kept several hundred women in the harem for ostentation. Besides his abstinence, after so many horrid crimes committed, his table was not maintained out of the revenue of the crown: he said, That food was not good which cost the sweat of his subjects, but that every man ought to work for his living. For this reason he wrought caps, and presented them to the governors of his kingdoms and provinces, who, in return for the honour done them, sent him a present of several thousand rupees.

The great mogul's usual place of residence is at Agra, and sometimes at Dehli and Labior, in which cities the king is always guarded by an Omrah, with a body of twenty thousand horse, who encamp about these cities; and this guard is relieved every eight days. But Aureng-Zeb, dreading the ambition of his sons, had for these fifteen years continued in the field, and encamped at different places. When he moves, a tent is carried before, by one hundred and twenty elephants, fourteen hundred camels, and four hundred small carts, to be erected where he is to go. Eight other elephants carried eight chairs, more like biers wrought with gold and silver, or gilt wood, and closed with crystal; there were three others carried by eight men each, in one of which the king went when he did not chuse to mount an elephant.

Aureng-Zeb had several children; the eldest, named Mahmud, aspiring to the crown before his father's death, was apprehended and poisoned. The second, Scialam, entertaining the same thoughts, was confined six years in a dark prison tho' sixty years of age, and had been set at liberty only a few days before Gemelli came to the camp. Azam-Scia,

Scia, the third son, likewise plotting against his father, was taken, and lost his kingdom: he was then about fifty-five years of age. His fourth son is called Akbar, more ambitious than all the rest; for being sent by his father in the year 1680, with an army of thirty thousand men, to make war on the Ragia Lifonte, he joined his forces with those of Ragia against Aureng-Zeb, but being defeated, he fled into Persia, where he was nobly received by Scia-Selemon, and had an allowance to maintain him suitable to his quality. His youngest son Sikander, about thirty years of age, is infected like the rest with the contagious distemper of ambition; therefore the old king keeps always at the head of the powerful army, to defend himself against his sons.

The great Mogul is so absolute, that his will in all things is a law, and the last decision of all causes, both civil and criminal: he makes a tyrannical use of this absolute power; for being lord of all the land, the princes themselves have no certain place of abode, the king altering it at pleasure; and the same with the poor peasants, who have sometimes the land they have cultivated taken from them, and that which is untilld given them in lieu of it; besides that they are obliged every year to give to the king three fourths of the crop. For the better management of public affairs, and due administration of justice, the king keeps four secretaries of state, who are to acquaint him with all that happens in the empire, and to receive his orders. Each of the days of the week, except Friday, which is their festival, is set apart for some of these secretaries to inform the king of matters belonging to his province; and, notwithstanding his continual application to these private audiences, Aureng-Zeb never failed of giving public audiences every day except Friday.

An infinite number of rupees is continually flowing into the great mogul's exchequer; for, besides the usual taxes and excessive imposts, the subjects must pay for their land, which is all his, and all employments both civil and military are sold; and when the possessors of any of them die, all they are worth falls to the king; for this reason, no family can continue long great, but sometimes the son of an omrah goes a begging. Add to all this, that tho' in so vast an empire, there are many barren lands, yet other provinces are wonderfully fruitful, as that of Bengal, which exceeds Egypt in plenty of all the fruits of the earth; besides, the country is so populous, that the artificers, tho' naturally given to sloth, are forced by necessity to work on carpets, brocades, embroidery, cloth of gold and silver, and other manufactures worn there, and exported every year by an infinite number of ships, not only over Asia, but into Afric and Europe.

That the reader may form some idea of the wealth of this empire, he is to observe, that all the gold and silver which circulates throughout the world at last centers here. It is well known, that as much of it as comes out of America, after running thro' several kingdoms in Europe, goes partly into Turkey for several sorts of commodities, and partly into Persia for silk; now the Persians, Arabians, and Turks, not being able to go without the commodities of India, send great quantities of money to Mocca, to Bassora, to Bander-Abassi and Gombroon, which is afterwards sent over in ships to Indostan, there to purchase India goods. Besides, the European ships that go by the Cape of Good Hope every year, carry upwards of a million sterling to that country, to buy those goods which the merchandise they carry out is not able to purchase. It is said, the mogul receives from only his heredi-

hereditary countries, eight hundred millions of rupees a year; but the tribute of the conquered countries could not be computed. His expences are also very large; for he has dispersed thro' his empire three hundred thousand horse, and four hundred thousand foot, who have all large pay. At court the daily expence is fifty thousand rupees, to maintain the elephants, horses, dogs, hawks, tygers, and deer; as also some hundreds of black and white eunuchs to look to the royal palaces, musicians, and dancers.

The arms offensive of the mogul's are broad heavy swords, bowed like scymitars; and those made in the country being apt to break, the English furnish them with such as are made in Europe, ill-shaped daggers, which they always wear hanging to their girdle; bows and arrows, javelins, pistols, muskets, and pikes twelve feet long for the foot, but most of the soldiers have bows and arrows; they have also cannon in their cities and armies; their arms are a round buckler two feet diameter, made of hides of buffaloes, and stuck with nails, coats of mail, breast-plates, head-pieces. The soldiers are paid by the omrahs, who command them, for which they have lands assigned them by the mogul. The omrahs are divided into several degrees, and their pay is proportional to the number of men they are ordered to keep; besides which, the king allows them a pension for their own use. Some of them turn vastly rich; but they spend all they get in presents they are forced to make the king every year, and in keeping so many women, servants, camels, and horses of great value. Their number thro' the empire is not settled, but they are generally under forty; they appear abroad with noble equipages, some on elephants, others on horseback, or in palankines, attended by the guards of their palaces. All that reside

reside at court are obliged to go twice a day to pay their respects to the king, that is, about ten in the morning, and about sun-set, in the place where he administers justice, or else they lose part of their pay. Next the omrahs in honour are the mansabdars, who have very honourable pay, own no superior but the king, and are only obliged to maintain four or five horse. The third degree is the rowzinders, who are also horse, but paid by the day, and their post is not so honourable as the former. The light horse are subject to the omrahs, and are accounted the best, for the foot and musketeers are in a miserable condition, and little to be depended upon. The artillery is divided into two sorts, the heavy cannon and the light, as they call it: the heavy consists of sixty or seventy guns, without reckoning three hundred field-pieces fixt on camels backs: the second sort consists of sixty or seventy small brass guns on carriages, with little red banners, each drawn by two horses. All this artillery, especially the heavy, is under the direction of Franks, or Christian gunners, who receive extraordinary pay; some of them formerly had two hundred rupees a month, but now the moguls have learned something of the art, they have less. Besides the mogul foldiers, there are rajapurs, hired of the rajas or petty princes, for great pay, that some of them being in his service and favoured more than others, the rest may envy them and seek the same honour. All foldiers whatsoever receive their pay duly every two months, except those that are paid by the omrahs; nor is there any danger their pay should be kept from them; for all people here, living either by their industry, or by serving the king, if they were not well paid they must either starve or mutiny.

There are two principal festivals kept in the court of the great Mogul, the first called *bars-gunt*, or yearly knot, is on the king's birth-day,

it being a custom with these people to tie a knot upon a cord they keep by them for every year of their life. This solemnity is kept with great pomp, all the great ones coming to wish the king many happy years, with presents of money and jewels. This day the mogul sits upon his richest throne, which is all over set with diamonds, emeralds, rubies, pearls, and sapphires. The roof of it likewise is so orderly enriched with jewels of inestimable value, all found within the empire, that some make the value of it to rise to fifty millions.

The second festival is that of Tol, which in that language signifies weight, and is kept in the king's house, where they weigh money, jewels, and other things of value presented by the great men and favourites, which are afterwards distributed among the poor with great solemnity. It is held a few days before or after the Barisunt.

The Indians are well-shaped, it being rare to find any of them crooked; and for stature like the Europeans. They have black hair, but not curled; and their skin is of an olive colour. They do not love white, saying it is the colour of leprosy. They live in low houses, with trees about them, so that at a distance their cities look like woods. They use carts to travel in, drawn by oxen, and asses when the journey is short. They delight very much in hunting, and make use of dogs and tame leopards. The Mahometans of Indostan, tho' barbarous in other respects, are not so deceitful, so proud, or such enemies to Christians as the Turks. The Pagans are still more just to travellers. The languages spoken at court are the Arabian and the Persian: as for sciences, they can make no progress in them for want of books, for they have none but some small manuscript works of Aristotle and Avicenne in Arabic. In physic they have but small skill, and cure several diseases by fasting. They spend all they have in luxury, keeping a vast number

number of servants, but above all, of concubines. The great men have noble structures, with several courts, and the top of the houses flat, to take the air; and fountains with carpets about them, to sit and receive visits from their friends. In their discourse they are modest and civil, not using so many actions with their hands, nor talking so loud as some Europeans do. The vests of both men and women are narrow towards the waist, and hang down half way the leg; under them they wear long breeches, which serve for stockings. The foot remains bare, with a sort of flat shoes, which are easily slipt off when they go into rooms to keep them clean, they being covered with carpets. The mahometan women do not appear in public, except only the vulgar sort and the lewd ones. The Indian idolaters may not have several wives at once, like the Mahometans, but when the first is dead, they may take another, provided she be a maid, and of the same race or tribe. All the women are fruitful, which is caused by the air and provisions; and are so easily delivered, that some of them go wash in the river the same day. They bring up their children naked till seven years of age. When a man or woman has committed such a crime as to be expelled their tribe, as if a woman had lain with a Mahometan, she must live for a certain time only upon corn found in the cows dung, if she will be received again.

As to the manner of burying, the usual way is to wash the body first in a river or pool, then burn it in a neighbouring pagod, and throw the ashes into the same water; some, after the body is washed, encompass it with wood, the wife, who has been that while near the body, singing and expressing a desire to die, is afterwards bound by a brachman, and burnt with it: a barbarous inhumanity! and yet they make a scruple of killing
flies

flies and pismires. Those wretched women that refuse to be burnt, are to shave their heads, and remain widows all their lives; are despised by their family and tribe, because they have feared death, and can never recover their reputation, unless by their singular beauty they should happen to get a second husband.

Since the Mahometans are become sovereigns of India, they do not easily consent to this inhumanity. The great mogul and other princes have commanded the governors of their towns to hinder the practice of this abuse; but they do not so strictly observe it, provided they have considerable presents made them; and thus the difficulty they have in getting leave, saves many women the dishonour. The mourning used by them is shaving their head and beard, when any kindred die within the third degree; and at their king's death, the women break their glass and ivory beads they wear on their arms.

Generally throughout all Indostan the heat is excessive, except near the mountains: between Surat and Agra, the metropolis of the mogul's dominions, it only rains at one certain time of the year, that is, during those three months the sun is about the tropic of Cancer; the other nine months the sky is so clear, that there is scarce a cloud to be seen above the horizon. Indostan abounds in rice, excellent wheat, and all sorts of grain, vast flocks and herds of cattle, butter and cheese. There being no grapes, the wine is brought out of Arabia and Persia. The flowers are very fragrant, and much better coloured than any in Europe. As for metals, the mogul's country affords none but copper, iron, and lead, but the want of others is abundantly made amends for, by rich mines of diamonds and other precious stones. The best is in the kingdom of Golconda, in a plain five miles

in compass, which produces no manner of fruits. They say it was discovered one hundred and forty years ago, after this manner: a peasant sowing in that plain, found such a rich diamond, that he carried it to a merchant of Golconda, who delighted in them more than the country-man. The news was immediately spread about the city, and every one that had money digging in that place, there were stones found from twelve to forty carats; and particularly a great one of some hundred carats, which was presented to Aurèng-Zeb by one of his omrahs: afterwards the king took the mine to himself, and now the merchants buy it of him by spans.

Besides all those kind of creatures which were mentioned, when speaking of Damam, they have here the musk wild goat; its snout is like a goat, the hair like a stag, and its teeth like a dog. Under the belly it has a little bladder as big as an egg, full of a thick congealed blood, which being cut off, is tied up in a skin that the scent may not evaporate, after which the beast lives but a short time. They are also taken on the cold mountains of the kingdom of Butan; but the greatest quantity and the best comes out of the country of the Tartars, bordering on China, where they make a great trade of it.

As for fowl, there are all kinds in India that Europe affords, and many peculiar to the country. In the woods are abundance of peacocks, several sorts of parrots, and green pigeons. Besides the wild hens there is a sort of tame ones, whose skin and bones are very black, but they are well-tasted. This vast empire, besides the natives, is inhabited by Persians, Tartars, Abyssinians, Armenians, Jews, Christians, Mahometans and others; but the most universal religions are the Mahometan and Pagan; for the first is professed by the mogul, the other by the antient lords and people of the

the country. All the gentiles in India hold the transmigration of souls; by which means, in their opinion, the souls after death receive the reward or punishment of their good or evil actions, being put into good or bad creatures. By reason of this same opinion, they take special care of all creatures, but chiefly of the cow, which they reckon the best, and therefore the habitation of the souls of good men; not only forbearing to eat them, but using all means to prevent others killing them. Tho' they all profess one religion, yet they are divided into eighty-four sects or tribes, each of which has its peculiar rites or ceremonies, and some distinct profession or trade, which it would be reckoned infamous ever to forsake.

The first and principal tribe is that of the brachmans or priests, which is divided into ten several sects. The first five feed on herbs and grain, without ever eating any thing that has life; the other five eat of all living creatures, except fish. In these sects no man may marry out of his own tribe; they all converse with one another, but if one comes that is not washed, they may not touch any body lest they defile him; the second tribe is that of the rajapours, or princes descended from warlike men. The wives of rajapours cannot avoid being burned with their husbands if they have no male issue, and if they refuse are carried by force. The third tribe of banians is divided into twenty sects, none of which marries into the other. They eat nothing that has life, living only on herbs and pulse. Almost all these are merchants, and being bred up to it from their infancy, they are much greater cheats than the Armenians and Jews. These are the chief tribes, the others being artificers, herdsmen, or peasants, with each their particular ceremonies and tenets; but the brachmans and banians only are so precise about killing

all creatures, suffering even those that are venomous to bite them, rather than hurt them. Out of all those tribes there are fachirs or penitents, who wander about the country, and impose rigorous penances upon themselves, and are so greatly respected by the gentiles, that they think themselves happy who can prostitute daughters, sisters, or kinswomen to their lewdness, which they believe lawful in them.

These gentiles are so blinded with profound superstition that they do not think it inconsistent to make their gods be born of men, and chuse wives, believing they love the same things men delight in. Some of them believe there are Elysian Fields, and that in order to come thither, a river is to be passed like the Styx of the antients, where they are to receive new bodies. Others are of opinion that the world will end very soon, after which they shall live again, and go into a new country. They all believe there is but one God, who has a thousand arms, a thousand eyes, and as many feet; but that he does not take notice of the particular actions of men, because they are not worthy to be the object of his divine thoughts. As for evil spirits, they believe they are so chained up that they can do them no harm. They talk of a man called Adam, who was the first and common father; and they say, that his wife having yielded to the temptation of eating the forbidden fruit, made her husband eat too. The priesthood among them is hereditary, as it was formerly among the Jews.

All the sects of gentiles on this side Ganges are very scrupulous as to eating with Christians and Mahometans, or making use of the same utensils; but those beyond Malacca make no difficulty of it. They are so silly or ignorant as to think a woman may conceive by strength of imagination; and tho' for several years they be thousands of miles distant,

yet

yet their wives imagining they lie with them, may become with child; and therefore, when they hear of their being brought to bed, they make great rejoicing. The trial upon suspicion of theft among them is, by making the party swim over a river that is full of crocodiles, and if he gets over safe he is reputed not guilty.

In all the temples or pagods of these idolaters, which for the most part are round, there are figures of devils, serpents, monkies, and several monsters hideous to behold. In the villages where there are not carvers to cut them, they take a stone shaped like a cylinder, or small pillar, coloured black, and placing it on a column, adore it instead of an idol, offering to it sacrifice of betel, arecca, and other things; and in the mountains, the country people had made choice, some of a stone, others of a tree, and some of an herb for their idol. The chief pagods they go in pilgrimage to are Giagrane, Benanus, Matura, and Tripeti; and in the kingdom of Bismaga there is a pagod with three hundred marble pillars in it, and it is affirmed, that formerly they had laid out ten thousand rupees there every year, in making a cart with eighteen wheels, on which, when the festival of the idol was kept, the brachmans mounting with two hundred of impudent women-dancers, skipped about in honour of the idol. The cart was drawn by five hundred men; and some idolaters, believing that death was the direct road to heaven, threw themselves under the wheels and were crushed to pieces. There is likewise a famous pagod in a small island near the island of Ceylon; at the entrance of it is a trough of black stone, and in it a statue of metal, with the eyes made of rubies. Within the further part of this pagod is another, which they open once a year, and there they adore a brazen idol called Lingon.

All the gentiles are obliged to go, once in their life at least, in pilgrimage to one of the four principal pagods, but the rich go several times, carrying the idols of their places of abode in procession, attended by hundreds of people and brachmans: and if they are nigh a river about the time of an eclipse, they break all their earthen vessels to use new ones, and run all of them to the river to boil rice and other things, which they throw in for the fishes and crocodiles; and while the eclipse lasts, they cast themselves into the river to wash, the brachmans attending the richest persons with clean cloths to dry them; then, on two or three small sticks of wood, they burn several blades of grain, with a great deal of butter, judging of the plenty of the year from the manner of the flame.

The princes of Asia that are idolaters are the kings of Cochin, China, Tunkin, Arachan, Pegu, Siam, China, and several chams in great Tartary, the kings of Japan and Ceylon, and some princes of the Moluccas; as also all the rajas in the mogul's empire, but of several sects, some more superstitious than others.

C H A P. XVII.

The author's return to Goa and voyage to Ma'aca, and from thence to China.

THE season for sailing to China now approaching, Gemelli wanted to return to Goa, but the begarine and his interpreter having both fled, he waited some days in hopes of company; at last finding none, he resolved to venture all alone thro' a country infested with robbers and enemies of christianity. On Sunday the 27th he mounted very melancholy, believing when he came at night to Edoar he should find a caravan of oxen, or some Christian of Goa, but was disappointed in both. On Tuesday he met the caravan of oxen, and travelled with it till sun-set; but being necessitated to alight, and the caravan going on, he lost sight of it, and being left alone in the open field, without any thing to eat, or place to take shelter in, he laid himself down among the bushes. Next day he went on alone without any knowledge of the road but what the tract of the oxen afforded. Four days after, he at last arrived at the Portuguese guards, very sickly and weak, upon account of the hunger and fatigue he had undergone, which the Castellan and his wife observing, would not suffer him to go any further, but by all means would have him be their guest, sending to a neighbouring farm for an andora to carry him to Goa, but an unmannerly soldier carrying it away by force, Gemelli went on, attended by a soldier of the castle to convoy him; and on Tuesday the 5th of April arrived at Goa in a very bad condition.

Having spent a month there to recover his health and spirits, on Wednesday the 4th of May he agreed

greed with Jerom Vasconcellos, captain of the Holy Rosary, bound for China, upon the condition of supplying himself with provisions during the voyage; and on Saturday the 14th, having taken leave of his friends, he went aboard with his goods, and a black slave, whom he had bought for eighteen pieces of eight. The vessel having fallen down to the mouth of the channel, set sail on Monday the 16th, and there being little wind, they were towed out by several boats of sixty oars, and balloons which are smaller, the city-pilots being on board to carry them over the flat at the fort of Gaspar Dios. On Wednesday the wind rising high, the pilots were obliged to run the vessels upon the sands to avoid the rock, and there being danger that the ships might split at the flood, every one endeavoured to carry off his goods and to get ashore; but by the assistance of more boats and balloons they were got off safe, with only the loss of their fresh water, and some provisions that were thrown overboard. They got not out on Thursday the 19th, thro' the fault of the city-pilots; but about break of day on Friday the 20th, the wind blowing fair, their vessel, called the Rosary, and five others put out to sea, and on Tuesday the 24th, the pilots judged themselves in the latitude of Cape Comorin. It is to be observed, that in this place they found an unaccountable work of nature, which is, that at the same time it is winter in Goa and all along that coast, it is summer upon all the opposite coast.

Wednesday the 25th, making an observation, they found themselves in the latitude of the island of Ceylon, which was joyful news to all on board, as being then sure they should continue their voyage. Friday the 3d of June they were in sight of the island of Nicobar, where it is said there is a well that converts iron into gold; an English
sailor

sailor having once affirmed, that an islander bringing some of the water on board, and by chance spilling some of it upon an anchor, that part upon which the water fell turned into gold. On Monday the 27th, after a tedious course, in which they were frequently carried back by opposite currents, they anchored off Malaca, where Gemelli went ashore with the captain, and took a lodging in an inn.

Malaca is seated on the most southern part of the ancient Chersonese, in two degrees and twenty minutes of latitude. The Portuguese took it from the king of Thor, but not without the expence of much blood. In the year 1640 it was taken from them by the Dutch, after they had defended it bravely for six months.

On Friday the 1st of July they sailed from Malaca, and on Tuesday the 12th they entered the mouth of the streight of Sincapiera, which is a quarter of a league over, but farther in wider, tho' inclosed at first by so many islands, that it is a mere labyrinth to ships, which those that have never seen it before think they shall never get out of, seeing land on all sides. Having left these islands, and sailing with a fair wind on Sunday the 17th, at break of day they were in sight of the island of Borneo. This island is the largest in the world, containing rarities of inestimable value, and almost unknown to Europeans, because all possessed by Mahometan kings, who do not suffer strangers to go up the country.

Tuesday the 19th, the wind continuing fair, they steered their course towards Pulo Condore; the sea being now clear of rocks and flats, and not being so much tossed, tho' the vessel ran swift, they were at their ease. The fair wind continuing all Wednesday the 20th, carried them across the gulph of Siam, into which falls the great river that

leads up to that court, after running one hundred and twenty miles, all the way inhabited on both sides. On Friday the 22d they came in sight of Pulo Condore, an island belonging to the king of Cochinchina, but not inhabited, upon account of the continual fumatras or storms of rain that fall every day. On Saturday the 23d, at sunset, they were off the coast of Champa, and on Sunday they sailed with a fair wind along the same coast, and in sight, and south of the bay of that name, whither several nations resort, to buy elephants teeth, eagle-wood, and other commodities.

All this country of Malaca, Cambaya, Siam, Champa, Cochinchina, and Tonquin, abounds in elephants, of which the Siamites particularly make a great trade, carrying them by land to the opposite coast, where merchants buy and transport them by sea into the dominions of Mahometan princes.

On Wednesday the 27th they were quite becalmed off the kingdoms of Tonquin and Cochinchina; but the wind rising fair towards night, next day they were near the island of Pulcatan, three hundred and sixty miles from Pulo Condore: this is a small island, three miles about, inhabited by Cochinchinese, and sometimes governed by a mandarine. Saturday the 30th, the same wind continuing till noon, it afterwards became fairer, set them very forward, and blowing so for two days, on Monday August the 1st they were off the island Aynan, belonging to the province of Canton. Tuesday the 2d, they came near the island of St. John, so famous for St. Francis Xavierius ending his days there when he hoped to enter China. Wednesday the 3d, towards evening, they could make no way because of the wind, and therefore lay tacking all night among a labyrinth of islands, which afforded a curious prospect, being lighted by many fisher-boats plying about them. These people always

live in their floating-houses, with their women and children, removing from one place of the islands to another, following the course of the fishes.

Thursday the 4th, being off Macao, several people came from the city in boats, every one to see his friend, among the rest F. Philip Fiesia procurator of Japan, with refreshments for ten fathers that were on board. Gemelli going into the bark with these fathers, got to the city Macao, on the so long wished for land of China, and was courteously entertained in the monastery of St. Augustin, by F. Joseph of the Conception, born at Madrid, and prior of the place.

C H A P. XVIII.

A description of the city Macao in China, with an account of the author's journey from thence to Canton, Nanking, and the imperial city Peking; a description of these cities, and the emperor's palace at Peking.

THE city Macao belongs to the Portuguese, and was built by them about the year 1585, upon a rocky arm of land, about three miles in circumference, and almost wholly surrounded by the sea, they having obtained a grant of it from the Chinese, as a place of safety to winter at, till the season would allow them to return home. The ground it stands on is uneven, but the houses are well-built, after the manner of Europe, and the churches are very fine; the streets also are well-paved, and there are three strong forts erected for its defence. The number of its inhabitants is computed at twenty thousand, five thousand of whom are Portuguese, and the others Chinese; but the whole territory belonging to the town

could not afford provisions to subsist them one day; therefore all is brought in from the Chinese villages, which are so plentiful, and afforded provisions so cheap, that the value of a piece of eight in bread will serve a man half a year.

All the income and revenue of this city depends upon the uncertainty of the sea, all persons whatever applying themselves to trade, and even that is greatly decayed since the massacre of the Christians in Japan, it being now death for any of them to be found there; yet as necessaries are so plentifully supplied from China, they live in abundance, and make so much of themselves, that their tables are never without sweetmeats, excellently furnished.

Gemelli being resolved to go over to Canton, went on Thursday the 11th, to speak to the Portuguese general, to get a pass from the mandarine, that he might not be troubled on the road; and on Sunday the 14th, being clad in the Chinese fashion, he waited on the mandarine himself, and took leave of him, after he had got a pass to all the custom-houses on the road, because he carried goods of bulk and a slave. Next day, in the evening, he went on board a boat for Canton, with a Chinese servant whom he hired for an interpreter, and the boat rowing all night by a single oar fastened in the stern, they made much way thro' the channel made by the islands, and the next day arrived at Canton, which is more like a village than a city, having no wall, and its low houses for the most part of timber, and thatched.

Hiring another boat he sailed forward to Seolam, and found it like a great wood inhabited: it is about three miles in compass; and besides, there are such a number of boats that they almost make another town. On the opposite side of the channel is another city called Santa, much greater and better built; likewise the whole country, on both

both sides, is crowded with villages, and adorned with green fields and beautiful towers every where appearing upon high mountains. Thursday the 18th, setting forward in a third vessel, with several Chinese, next day, at sun-rising, they put into the port of Canton; and Gemelli going to the monastery of the Spanish fathers, of the order of St. Francis, they received him very courteously, not without some jealousy of his being sent by the pope, to enquire privately into the divisions of China, there being then a dispute betwixt the bishop of Macao and the vicars apostolic of China, Tanquin and Cochinchina, which of them should have the superiority of the missionaries and catholics.

Canton is the metropolis of the province of Huantun, and being too large to be governed by one governor, it is divided into two by a wall from east to west. One cifu or regent is superior to these governors, and has two assistants; but the viceroy who governs the province is above them all: yet there is a vicar-general of two provinces who is above the viceroy. These two cities and their suburbs are so populous, that there is some trouble in going along in a chair; and the fathers missionaries affirmed, what to Europeans may sound like a fable, that they contained four millions of souls, and the province as many more. The houses are low, either of stone or brick, without any windows to the street, and almost all alike, the Chinese building all after the same model, so that their cities resemble one another.

There are four principal gates to the cities facing east, west, north, and south, the suburbs taking their names from them: if the city be large there are more gates, but these four must not be omitted. The streets are long and straight, and so crowded with rich shops, that both in the city and

fuburbs it looks like one continued fair; and a gentleman, if he would avoid the contempt of the Chinese, must not walk a step a foot, but must be carried in a chair; it is true indeed, a chair is to be had at a very easy rate, they asking only six-pence for carrying a person seven miles.

Near Canton appears another floating city in boats upon the canal; for in every one of them whole families live with their beasts and birds, each of them being as long as a galley, covered with canes or fig-leaves, with eleven or twelve several rooms in length, to which there is a communication thro' a boarded gallery, which runs along both sides of them.

Gemelli being resolved to go on to Pekin, spoke to the superior of the monastery where he lay, to provide him a faithful servant, upon which he procured him a Christian Chinese guide, who hired himself for six shillings and eight pence a month, and likewise recommended another about eighteen years of age, to serve as a cook, and do other mean offices.

Having made provision of victual, he went aboard with his two Chinese servants, on Friday the 26th, in the post-bark or packet-boat, sent every three days by the viceroy to the emperor. Setting sail on Saturday morning, they left the canal of Canton, and went into another less, full of boats, always in sight of villages and country-houses amidst green fields. Three hours before sun-setting they came to a large city called Fuscian, being two miles in length on both sides the bank, and as much in boats upon the water. Next morning they set out again, and before noon they had passed other two large villages, each a mile long, on both the banks. Continuing their voyage the three following days, they came to the town of Yntexyen, with a large suburb, and a Pagod near the river:

Still

still sailing on, they came on Sunday the 10th of September to Sciau-Cheufu, a city encompassed by a weak wall, four miles in compass.

Wednesday the 7th, after night-fall, they came to Chiankeu, a small village, which was as far as the first boat went. Here they took another less, because of the current, and for want of water: continuing their voyage, they came on Friday the 9th to Nangunfu, the last city of the province of Canton: this city stretches a mile and a half in length, and a quarter in breadth, and is full of shops of goods and provisions, being a great thoroughfare for all goods, carried either from or to Canton.

The channel from Macao reaching no farther, Gemelli hired chairs for himself and his servants to be carried over land to the great canal which leads to Nanking. The chairmen trotted five miles an hour, and tho' the way lay over craggy mountains, they rested only three times during the whole journey, which consisted of thirty miles. The way was like a continual fair, there was such an abundance of goods carried along it by an infinite number of porters, and so many chairs; at that time there was upwards of thirty thousand passing and re-passing. To feed such a number of people, the road is a continual row of villages and inns, where these porters dine for the value of a grain of Naples money, which is the smallest coin.

Three hours before night they came to Nangunfu on the great canal, where Gemelli lodged, in the house of the Spanish Franciscans. This city is about a mile in length, besides the suburbs, and there are many villages on the side of the canal. The houses are of stone, brick, and timber, low, and ill-built, and the shops not very rich; but the great canal deserves the notice and admiration of all strangers, being certainly a greater

256 THE VOYAGE OF

and more wonderful work, than all those ancient ones we are told of the Romans, Persians, Assyrians, or other former monarchies.

This great canal, extending for about the length of three hundred and thirty miles, begins at Peking, where the western Tartars who conquered China have fixt the seat of their empire, and was first made for the easy furnishing the necessary provisions for the support of that mighty court. To break the current of the water, and to make it the deeper, it has, in several places, seventy-two sluices, the passage thro' which is generally easy; but there are some few difficult and dangerous, where the boats are pulled up by four or five hundred men; and in going down they fasten ropes to the stern of the boat, which they turn round strong stone pillars, then let them run gently, while others with long poles shod with iron, keep the boats from dashing against the banks.

Sunday the 11th, Gemelli was so weak and sickly that he could not set out tho' the boat was ready; but next day he went on board, and the boat immediately set out with the stream, amidst very high mountains that encompassed them around. After a voyage of thirteen days on this canal, he came on Monday the 26th to Nanchianfu, the metropolis of the province of Kiansi, having passed by nineteen populous towns and villages, built upon the side of the canal.

The journey by water being tedious, he resolved to hire mules to Peking, but not finding that conveniency, he was forced to take another boat, where he took up his night's lodging for the conveniency of the coolness. On Wednesday the 28th he set out before day, and passing several fine towns, on Tuesday the 11th of May they arrived at the great suburb of Nanking. During their voyage they were thrice stoppt by the custom-house officers, who searched

searched their boat very narrowly, and they were entertained with the ingenuity of the fishermen, who used many contrivances to catch their fish that are unknown in Europe. Gemelli having landed, took a chair, and went in it some miles to the house of monsignior d'Argoli, a Venetian bishop of Nanking, by whom he was courteously received.

Kiamim or Nanking, which in the Chinese language signifies the southern court, is seated for the most part in a plain, and was formerly the imperial court, as Peking is at present. The compass of its walls is above thirty-six Italian miles, tho' some affirm it to be more than forty: the suburbs about the city are not much less than it, including another floating city upon boats in the canals. Some reckon thirty-two millions of souls here; but this account appears by later observations to be greatly exaggerated. This city is still the largest in the whole empire, where are the richest shops, the choicest books, the finest press, and the politest language. Here the most famous doctors and mandarines come to settle when out of employment. In short, this is as it were the center of the empire, where are to be found all rarities and curiosities of the other provinces.

Tho' the great populousness of this empire may be astonishing to Europeans, yet it is the natural consequence of the maxims they follow. The Chinese reckon it infamous to continue unmarried, so that if a man has ten sons they all marry early as many wives as they can maintain; and in China there are no whores tolerated, lest they corrupt youth, but any they find are severely punished: the Chinese also never quit their own country to people others, and greatly despise vagabonds who omit to propagate their families, thereby neglecting a duty to their deceased progenitors.

The city, by reason of its greatness, is under two governors, to whom are subordinate hundreds of mandarines for the administration of justice, besides others who have no dependance on them, but only on the emperor. To prevent as much as possible all extortion, corruption, and favour, the near relations of great ministers are not allowed to converse with those under their charge, it being forbid by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, for any man to have a command in his own country, or to have any bosom friends in the province where he is in power.

Here, among other remarkable things, are found two of the largest bells in the world, both fallen to the ground by their vast weight. The height of one is eleven feet; its diameter, including the thickness, is seven feet; the circumference contracts gradually to half the height, where it again extends; the thickness of the metal was six inches and a half; the weight, including that of the clapper, fifty thousand pounds. The other lay in a garden upon its side, half-buried; the height is twelve feet, without including the ring; the thickness is nine inches.

The gates of the city are of iron, and there are four at every entrance one within another, the structures about them being a musket-shot in thickness; near one of these gates there is a good bridge over the canal, and at the other end, in the suburb, is the pagod of the Paughensu, in the middle of a great court; within it is the statue of a woman standing, and on her right and left four colossus's, with arms in their hands, painted of several colours hideous to behold. Going on farther in another court is a greater pagod, all covered with porcelain of several colours. The entrance to it is thro' a large and spacious hall, above which is a porch which has five gates into the temple. The tower
itself

itself is all of porcelain, both within and without, yellow, green, blue, and of other colours, with the figures of many several idols; it is an octagon, and about forty feet round; has nine stories divided on the outside by as many cornishes, curiously wrought; the top is covered with brass, and a gilt globe on it: every story has four large windows answering the four quarters of the world; and the height of the whole is two hundred feet.

The tomb of the first emperor of the family of Minciau stands without the city, on a mountain, guarded by eunuchs who there lead a religious life: it consists of a great hall handsomely covered, with a place like a tribune or gallery in it, where that emperor's picture is kept locked up. The tomb is in a grot dug in the mountain, and the entrance kept shut. If Gemelli had staid till a day declared by the astrologers fortunate for burial, he would have seen several thousand coffins carried forth; for the Chinese cause make them in their lifetime, and after they are dead the corps is inclosed in them, and kept some time in the house till the astrologers appoint a day for burial.

In going along the streets of Nanking, one's nose is greatly offended with the smell of ordure which the porters are carrying in tubs for manuring the orchards, and sell to the gardeners for greens, vinegar, or money, they giving a better price for that which is come of flesh, than that of fish, which they know by tasting it with their tongue. Nothing is more frequent on the river than boats loaded with that filth; and if a man has the misfortune to be caught among these boats he is almost stifled. Along the roads there are convenient places, whitened, with seats, and covered, to invite passengers to stop and ease themselves; a vessel underneath prevents any thing from being lost.

While Gemelli staid at Nanking, the fathers endeavoured to persuade him not to go to Peking, because the Portuguese Jesuits wanted no European to look into the state of that court; but perceiving they could not alter his resolution, they took care to provide what was necessary for his journey. He might have gone by water within half a day's journey of Peking, but as it is a tedious way, and every body travelling from Nanking by land, he chose to do the same.

Having returned the bishop and the fathers, his companions, thanks for their kind entertainment, he set out on Saturday the 15th, after dinner, and had the fortune to have the company of a Christian Chinese doctor, who had taken his degree to be a mandarine, and wanted nothing but money, without which no employments are given in China. After they had got without the city they took boat, and passing under the bridge went along the channel about the walls of the city; then they changed boat, where a scurvy accident happened to Gemelli, which had like to have stopt his journey; for his servant, tho' warned, forgot in the other boat a little portmanteau, in which he had laid up one hundred pieces of eight; but as they were returning in search of it, they observed the watermen of the first boat rowing after them, calling to them to take it.

Being over the Kian, which is the greatest river in China, and at that place two miles broad, they came to the city of Puken, seated on the left of the river, with a wall ten miles in compass, but with few houses, the people chusing to live in the suburbs, which are very large. The doctor's over-civility was very troublesome; for at all actions, tho' never so natural, the Chinese ceremonies must be still observed; and at night he so greatly importuned Gemelli to make his two servants sit down

at table; that he condescended to it rather than disoblige him, tho' afterwards he was sensible of his error, for they growing bolder with him on the road served him ill.

Sunday the 16th they travelled all day without drawing bit, over hills, mountains, and plains, well-inhabited, but the houses were all small: by the way they met crowds of passengers, and caravans of mules and asses, and little carts with one wheel, drawn by two men, upon each of which lay as much as would have loaded two mules. The roads, tho' greatly frequented, did not render travelling dear; for ten farthings will serve any man night and morning, and the Chinese delighting most in porridge and herbs, a good fowl or duck may be bought for three farthings. Through the whole journey, which consisted of two thousand one hundred and fifty lys, each of which is two hundred and sixty paces, the road lay thro' fertile fields and populous towns, especially in the province of Peking, where there was not a stage without two or three large villages or towns.

Sunday the 6th of November, after travelling twenty miles together along the foot of uncouth mountains, Gemelli arrived at Peking, and went to alight at the house of the Jesuits, to make himself known to F. Philip Grimaldi, provincial and the emperor's president for the mathematics, that by his means he might see what was most remarkable at court. He received him very courteously, expressing a concern that he could not entertain him in the monastery till he had acquainted the emperor; and admiring who had advised him to come to Peking, whither no European may come without being sent for by the emperor. Gemelli answered, that the same liberty he took to go to the courts of the grand signior, the king of Persia, and the mogul, brought him to that of Peking, but that

that he did not desire to see forts or any thing else that might raise a jealousy in the Chinese; therefore taking his leave, they waited upon him to the door, causing their servants to attend him to his lodging which was taken for him in the Chinese city.

Xuntien, or Peking, is in the latitude of forty degrees, seated in a spacious plain, and divided into two cities, the one called the Tartar and the other the Chinese. The first is square, every side being three Italian miles in length, with nine gates. This city is inhabited by Tartars, and by the emperor's servants and attendants about his person, or belonging to his courts and councils, all officers civil and military being there. The Chinese city is of the same bigness as the other, being four leagues in compass, but not perfectly square; it has seven gates, which with the nine of the other city, make sixteen in all; from each of the gates runs a very long suburb, so that the whole is twenty-one miles in compass; both suburbs and city are well inhabited. The great streets run from north to south, and the rest from east to west; they are all strait, long, wide, and well proportioned; the finest of them all is that called Skian-Gankiai, that is, the street of perpetual rest: it is above one hundred and thirty feet wide, and so famous, that the learned men in their writings make use of its name to signify the city. The houses even here are low, and tho' the great men have large and stately palaces, they are shut up backwards, and nothing appears outwards but a great gate, with houses on both sides, inhabited by the servants, tradesmen, or mechanics.

The multitude of people here is incredible; for all the streets of both cities are full of people, as well the little ones as the great, and there is such a throng in all parts as cannot be paralleled but
with

with the fairs and processions in Europe. Some of the missionaries then resident there affirmed, that in both cities, in the suburbs, and on the water, there were no less than sixteen millions of souls; but exacter accounts since shew that this computation is an error.

The emperor's palace is seated in the midst of this great city, fronting the south, as is the custom of that country: it is enclosed by a double wall, one within another, and square; that without is sixteen spans high, built of brick; its length is two Italian miles, and the breadth half as much, having a gate in the middle of each side, guarded by twenty Tartars and twelve eunuchs. The inner wall, which immediately encloses the palace, is much higher and thicker, made of large bricks, all equal, and adorned with handsome battlements. It is a mile and a half in length, and half as much in breadth, having four great arched gates; over these gates and the angles of the wall are eight halls, of an extraordinary bigness, and beautiful structure, set off with red varnish, strewed with flowers of gold, and the covering of yellow tiles. Two captains with forty Tartars guard the entrance of each of the inner gates, and to every gate there is a draw-bridge over the ditch that surrounds the wall: in the space between the two walls are built several round detached houses, large and convenient for several uses and purposes: and on the east side, within the outer wall, runs a river with several strong bridges over it, all of marble, except a wooden draw-bridge in the middle. On the west side is a pond well-stored with fish, above a mile in length, over the middle of which is a fine bridge, and at each end a triumphant arch, of a beautiful and excellent structure. The remaining spaces are divided into wide streets, inhabited

habited by servants, officers, and workmen belonging to the imperial palace.

The imperial apartments, within the inner enclosure, some will have to be twenty, others twelve, and some will have them to be nine, with as many courts, every one writing by hearsay, and not by what he has seen, for it is impossible for any European to see them all, especially that of the women: we shall only say, that all these courts and apartments are upon a line with great halls of a gothick structure, wherein the timber work is beautiful enough, a great number of pieces of wrought work advancing one above another, in the nature of cornishes. When one views the emperor's apartments, the arches sustained on massy pillars, the steps of white marble to go up to the high rooms, the roofs shining with gilt tiles, the ornaments of carving, varnishing, gilding, and painting, the pavements, which are almost all of marble, or porcelain; the whole is certainly beautiful and admirable, and like the palace of a great prince: nevertheless, the architecture and ornaments are not very regular, and here is not the symmetry and beauty of the European palaces.

CHAP.

C H A P. XIX.

The presenting of the new kalendar; the audience given to the author by the emperor; a description of the great wall; an account of the religions in the empire of China, and its extent and form of government described.

F Grimaldi sending for Gemelli, told him, that morning was a proper time to go with him into the palace, because he was to present the emperor the new kalendar for the year 1696, which he had composed in the Chinese, the Tartar, the eastern and western languages. Having passed the first wall, within which stands the house of the French jesuits, they entered the palace thro' a great gate guarded with soldiers; and crossing a great court, on the sides whereof were lanes of soldiers well clad, and in good order; they went up to the first hall by twenty steps of white marble. This room was very large, so that, besides the walls, the roof was supported by two rows of pillars within, well painted and gilt. This hall led to the second court, where there was another hall with a like ascent: from this they went thro' other courts, to the third and the fourth hall, which last exceeded the others in structure and cost. Before they came into this fourth hall, Grimaldi delivered the almanac put up in a casket covered with silk, to a person sent by the emperor, who took it with great respect and civility.

Afterwards, desiring Gemelli to wait, he told him he would introduce him to his majesty, it being necessary, lest coming afterwards to know of his being there, he should be offended. In fine, after an hour's stay, during which Gemelli learned the

the ceremonies he was to perform, a servant came to bid them advance. They passed thro' four long courts, hemmed in with apartments, under very high and well-proportioned gates of white marble. The emperor's throne was in the midst of a great court, on the top of five stages above one another, lessening proportionally, and each hemmed in with banisters of fine white marble. On the top of the fifth ascent, and round the throne, was an admirable open room covered with gilt tiles, and supported by strong wooden pillars varnished. The emperor was seated after the Tartan manner, on a sofa or floor raised above the rest of the room three feet, and covered with a large carpet which reached over all the pavement; he had by him ink, books, and pencils, after the Chinese manner, to write; and was clothed in yellow silk, which is the imperial colour, embroidered with dragons; on his right and left were ranks of eunuchs, well clad, and without any weapons. Having performed the ceremonies of salutation, they were ordered to advance and kneel down before the emperor. The father being interpreter, he asked of Gemelli concerning the wars then carried on in Europe; he asked him likewise whether he was a physician, or understood surgery or the mathematics; to which Gemelli answered in the negative, being forewarned by the fathers not to own his understanding any science, otherwise the emperor would detain him in his service. At length he gave them their congèe, and they retired without any ceremony.

Tuesday the 8th Gemelli went in a chair, which is very dear in Peking, to see the city towards the east quarter, and found every where very beautiful public places and rich shops. He found the cold very sharp in the streets, and therefore afterwards he did not stir out till the sun had gathered strength: this sharpness in Peking proceeds from the

the nearness of the high mountains which divide the Great Tartary from China, that the hardest weather is not till January, the winter beginning in November, and continuing till the middle of March without any rain at all; during which time, by means of the great frost, there are brought out of the Eastern Tartary, an infinite number of pheasants, partridges, deer, wild boars, and other beasts, all so frozen, that the beasts will keep two or three months, and the pheasants thirty days. From March till the beginning of June they have a perfect spring, with little rain; but in June and July, and till the middle of August, the rains are plentiful, and are very necessary to wash the streets of all the filth gathered in them; for grave persons are not ashamed to ease themselves in public places.

Upon account of the cold the women wear coifs and caps on their heads, whether they go in chairs or a horseback; yet they chuse rather to be numbed in their rooms than use any fire, being in great want of wood, and not able to endure the noisome smell of a sort of mineral like the English sea-coal, which they burn only in their kitchens.

The so famous great wall of China being not far from Peking, Gemelli had the curiosity to see it. The fathers advising him to avoid the guards, and go to that part of it next the mountains, on Saturday the 12th he set out with an attendant, and next day arrived at the wall. This wall is in some places fifteen feet high, in others twenty-six; but in the vallies it is much higher and thicker, for six horses may easily go abreast on it. The structure is all of large burnt bricks, and few stones; about two bowshots from one another there are large strong square towers, which continue all the length of the wall to the sea, and even half a league into it.

The length of the whole wall is computed at five hundred Spanish leagues, running thro' valleys and over mountains as need requires, yet not so as to be every where upon a level, as some would have us believe; it is above one thousand eight hundred years since the emperor Xihoamti caused it to be built against the incursions of the Tartars, yet the structure still looks as if it were new, except only some few ruins, which the Tartars do not mind to repair. In prudence, the Chinese should have secured the most dangerous passes, but what appeared ridiculous, was to see the wall run up to the top of a high and steep mountain, where the birds would hardly build, much less the Tartar horse climb to break into the country. Monday the 14th, he returned the same way he came, and was at Peking next day before it was dark.

Friday the 18th, the emperor went from the palace to his country-house, where he diverts himself half the year. The manner of the procession was as follows; first marched about two thousand soldiers and servants, after whom followed about twenty women in close calashes, next came the king attended by the princes of the blood and mandarines; he was a horseback, plainly clad in a garment of gold colour, embroidered with dragons. On his manso, or Tartar cap, was a rich jewel. Sometimes when he goes abroad, he is carried in a chair by thirty-two men, who contrive it so ingeniously lattice-wise, that all equally bear a part of the burthen.

In this large empire of China, there are several religions professed, according to the variety of people in it. To begin with the emperor, he being a Tartar, follows the idolatry of his nation, which in the main agrees with the religion of the Chinese and Japanese; yet they all differ in sects,
which

which arises from the several idols which every one takes for his titular god.

The Tartars of Great Tartary, adore a deity whom they esteem the god of the earth, and no man is without his image, in his house, with some other smaller ones, whom they call his wife and children; these they adore and worship, especially when they are going to dinner or supper. But there is a much more impious and ridiculous adoration paid by the Tartars to a living man, whom they call lama or priest of priests. This man is adored as a deity by all the kings of Tartary and their subjects, who go in pilgrimage with considerable gifts, worship him as a true and living god. He, as a great favour, shews himself in a dark place of his palace, adorned with gold and silver, and lighted by several hanging lamps, sitting upon a cushion of cloth of gold on a place raised from the ground, and covered with fine carpets; then they all prostrate themselves flat on the ground and humbly kiss his foot. In Peking, there is a great temple within the palace of these religious lama's. It is a round tower of twelve stories, handsomely built upon an artificial hill, made like a sugar loaf of great stones carried from the sea. On the top of the tower are many small bells, which being shaken with the wind, ring night and day. The idol on the altar is like a naked rustick man, and adored only by the lama's and western Tartars, the eastern Tartars and the Chinese abhorring it. The principal idol they adore in the kingdom of Lassa is Menipe, made up of nine human heads in form of a cone; before which, they offer sacrifice, and place meat, to gain the favour of the idol. The Mahometan religion has also made so great a progress in China, being brought in by the Tartars of the greater Tartary, that

that the missionaries affirmed there were upwards of two millions that professed it.

The religion of the Chinese may be reduced to three principal sects. One of the literati or learned, the second of Lawzu, and the third that of the commonalty. That of the learned, is directed to two principal ends, the one the public good of the kingdom, the other the particular happiness of individuals, to be procured by the merit of virtuous actions, according to the dictates of reason, improved and made perfect by moral philosophy, wherein they take much pains to advance themselves. Yet most part of them do not believe the immortality of the soul, regarding only the precepts of morality, as they contribute to human happiness in this life. Nevertheless, the wiser sort, thinking it intolerable on the one hand to believe that men and beasts are equal as to length of life, nay, that there should be brutes that live longer, some an age and some more; on the other hand, not thinking that immortality is the natural property of the soul, but a reward of merit; they affirm that virtue is a quality that partakes somewhat of the divine being, and able to remove all that is corruptible out of the soul where it resides, so that when parted from the body, it shall be united to God. The famous Chinese philosopher Confucius, who lived about two thousand years ago, is honoured by them with humble prostrations and worship, he having a temple built to him in every city near the schools, where the mandarines, doctors, and batchelors, meet every new and full moon. This sect use no temples, nor priests, nor idols, nor sacrifices, nor sacred rites.

The second sect is called of Lawzu, from a philosopher of that name, who lived in the time of Confucius, and said to have been carried in his mother's womb eighty years before he was born.

They

They believe that the sovereign God is corporeal, and governs other deities as a king does his subjects; they are greatly addicted to chymistry, believing that by means of a certain drink, men may become immortal. The priests of this sect particularly employ themselves in expelling the devils out of houses, and pretend to the power of procuring rain or fair weather at pleasure, and of averting private and public calamities; this sect at present has but few followers. The third sect is that of the common sort, or of the Bonzes, who have idols and deities represented in strange and monstrous figures; and among the rest, two famous thro' all the east, namely Amida and Schiaca. It is the principle of this sect, contrary to that of the learned, to take no care of the public, and only mind themselves. They allow the soul's immortality after the death of the body, and that it is rewarded or punished according as it deserves; but they condemn matrimony, and live in common.

It is said this pernicious sect was brought into China after this manner. In the year 63, after the birth of Christ, the shape of a holy hero appeared to the emperor in a dream, and being farther persuaded by the words of Confucius, that in the west, there was a just man, he sent his ambassador to find the holy man and the holy law; they coming to an island not far from the Red Sea, and not having the courage to go any farther, returned with an idol and statue of a man called Foe; they had been happy and deserved well of their country, had they brought the doctrine of Christ, which at that time was preached by St. Thomas the apostle in India.

From these three sects have sprung many others, and an incredible multitude of idols proceeds from the erecting statues to men, who for some memorable action, have deserved well of their country;

as also from their opinion that there are particular spirits in the woods, hills, rivers, and seas, to whom they erect and consecrate statues.

The most universal idol is that they call Chia-Xuan, the protector of towns and cities, every town having a pagod with this idol, which is represented with horses bridled and saddled, held by two servants for his use; and they say whilst he lived he travelled a thousand miles a day. The soldiers and martial men have a particular idol for themselves, as the European heathens had Mars.

The Christians throughout the empire of China amount to two hundred thousand, served by missionaries of several orders, who are much obliged to the jesuits in Peking; they having at all times stood up against the malice of the mandarines, in defence of the fathers, who are spread about the kingdom looking after their churches. Nor could any other order maintain itself; for as the Chinese love the Europeans for their own interest, the jesuits are obliged to exert themselves to please them, by composing their almanac in three languages, with the motions of the planets, and most considerable stars, to observe eclipses, and make mathematical instruments and clocks. Having also set up a press, and printed many books of science and devotion, particularly a translation of the Bible, and the works of St. Thomas, they begin to undeceive the Chinese, who are so fond of themselves, that they look upon all others as barbarous, and unpolished.

The interpreters of the Chinese history deduce the original of that great monarchy from Fohi, who began his reign in the year 2952 before Christ, and brought the savage and wandering men to live in society. About three hundred years after him, reigned Hoamti, called the yellow emperor, because he took that colour, which is allowed

to none but the emperors. He invented music and musical instruments, as also arms, nets, carts, ships, and carpenter's work, and composed several books of physic; his queen brought in fashion the keeping of silk worms, and of dying and weaving silk. Xao-Hao succeeded Hoamti, and began to build and enclose the villages with walls. Kuen-Hio, the next emperor, invented the calendar, and Tico his grandson, who succeeded next, appointed masters to teach the people, and found out vocal music. After these princes came the two celebrated emperors and legislators, Yo and Xun, from whom the civil rites and institutions are derived. The imperial families are descended from these two founders of the Chinese nation; in all, they reckon twenty-two of them, that is, nine great ones, and thirteen lesser, among whom is included the family of the eastern Tartars, which, at this present, rules the Tartar and Chinese empires. By their chronological tables, it appears that the monarchy has continued four thousand six hundred and fifty-seven years from Fohi, without any interruption. We cannot but own, there is no kingdom or state in the world, that can boast of so ancient a race of kings, so numerous and well continued. This long continuance and antiquity, besides other excellencies of China, fills the Chinese with pride, they looking upon their own empire as the greatest, and every thing else that belongs to them as the best. In their maps, they describe China square, and very large, and represent the other kingdoms about it, without any order or geographical method, making them little and inconsiderable, with ridiculous and contemptible names.

This vast empire is seated in the most eastern part of the continent of Asia, and reaches twenty-three degrees, or one thousand three hundred and eighty Italian miles; its breadth in a straight line

east and west, is one thousand two hundred Italian miles, it is bounded on the east by the eastern ocean, on the north by a long wall dividing it from Tartary, on the west by very high mountains and sandy deserts, separating it from several kingdoms, and on the south by the ocean. It is divided into fifteen provinces, which may rather be called large kingdoms, besides several islands depending upon it. The walled places in this mighty empire are to the number of four thousand four hundred and two, and divided into two classes, civil and military.

The number of inhabitants in this kingdom is almost incredible; a grave author computes the number of families at eleven million five hundred two thousand eight hundred and seventy-two, without including in this number, beggars, mandarines in employment, soldiers, batchelors, licentiates, doctors, mandarines above age, all persons that live on the rivers, bonzes, eunuchs, and all those of the blood royal; because those only are polled, who till the land, or pay taxes to the king. There are in the empire, according to the same author, fifty-nine million seven hundred and eighty-eight thousand three hundred and sixty-four men; nay, some make them three times the number that there are in all Europe. They reckon in the kingdom three thousand six hundred and thirty-six men, renowned and illustrious for their virtue, learning, valour, and other remarkable qualities; there are a hundred and eighty-five mausoleums, famous for structure and riches; four hundred and eighty idol temples of renown, and much resorted to, on account of their majesty and wealth, and for the pretended miracles wrought at them. The famous ancient statues are to the number of two thousand and ninety-nine, besides paintings and other celebrated works of that nature; one thousand

and one hundred and fifty-nine towers, triumphal arches, and notable monuments, in honour of kings and men of renown; two hundred and seventy-two libraries well adorned and stored with books; the great rivers and fountains of note for hot and medicinal waters, are one thousand four hundred and seventy-two. There are also two thousand and ninety-nine mountains rendered fruitful by their many springs, and singular for pasture, and the excellent minerals they produce. The schools and public structures erected in honour of Confucius, are as many as their cities. And to conclude, there are in the empire two hundred and thirty-one famous bridges.

China deserves great commendation for its excellent government; of the three sects of religion followed there, that of the learned is the first and ancientest, and its principal end is the good government of the kingdom; upon which subject, they have wrote a great number of books. The mandarines of the empire are divided into nine classes, and every class into nine degrees; this distinction is a meer title of honour conferred upon them by the emperors, without any regard to their employments. The knowledge, distinction, and subordination of these orders are so perfect, the submission and veneration of the inferior to the superior, and the authority of the latter over the others so great, and, in short, the king's power over them all is so absolute, that there is nothing to compare to it in our governments, either civil or ecclesiastical.

The mandarines of the first class, are counsellors of his majesty's council of state, which is the greatest honour and dignity a learned man can rise to in the empire. They have several honourable titles, and in the royal palace, there are several halls for them of a stately structure. This is the

supreme council or court in the whole kingdom, and kept in the palace on the left hand of the supreme chamber, as the most honourable place; the Chinese giving the chief honour to the left side. This court is composed of two other ranks of mandarines, besides the first already mentioned; they have it in charge to peruse, examine, and judge of all petitions presented to his majesty by the six great courts, upon all the most important affairs of the kingdom. When they are come to a resolution, they present it to the emperor in writing, who either confirms or cancels it, as he thinks fit.

Besides this sovereign court or council, there are eleven other great courts, among which the emperor of China divided all the affairs of his empire two thousand years before Christ; and these same continue still. Six of them belong to the learned mandarines, and five of them to the military. The power of these courts was extraordinary great and unlimited, so that from them, some disturbance to the state might be dreaded; therefore the wisdom of the Chinese emperors has so regulated their business, that no one of them can determine any affair committed to it, without the concurrence of the other. Each of these courts has a supervisor or examiner, who examines all that is transacted, and if he finds any error, presently acquaints the emperor with it. In China, these men are called mad dogs, because they are continually biting by the mischief they do. These six courts are seated according to their dignity, near the imperial palace on the east side, the emperor daily providing dinner for all those that attend, that business may be dispatched with more expedition.

Did the mandarines in trials and decisions do their duty according to the laws or the kings design,

sign, China would be the happiest country in the world, and the best governed. But, as great observers as they are of outward formalities, they are inwardly no less malicious, hypocritical, and cruel. The business of the first of these six courts, is to furnish all the kingdom with mandarines, and to examine their merits and demerits, to represent them to the king, that they may be preferred to better posts or put back into meaner, as a reward or punishment. The second court is the king's great treasury or court of exchequer. It has the management of all the treasures, revenues, and taxes; as also of the expences. It keeps the rolls or musters, taken very exactly every year, of all the families, houses, of all the men, of the surveys of the land and its taxes, and of all the customs. The third court has the inspection into ceremonies, rites, sciences, and arts; it has the charge of the emperor's music, of judging of the titles and honours the emperor will bestow on persons of merit, of the temples, and of the sacrifices the emperor offers to the sun, moon, heaven, earth, and to his ancestors. It has full power over arts and mechanics, and in fine, over all the religions professed in the empire. The fourth sovereign court has the direction of war and military affairs thro' the whole kingdom. It chuses and prefers all officers, distributes them in the army, frontiers, and garrisons, and all parts of China. The fifth sovereign court is the criminal court of all the empire. It has authority to punish all crimes according to the laws of the empire. The sixth and last is called the court of public works: it has the care of building and repairing the royal palaces, the kings tombs, and the public temples; it looks after the towers, bridges, and all other necessary works to make the rivers navigable, and the roads fit for travelling. These six courts have under

them forty-four inferior courts, which have all their palaces, within the precincts of the great one they depend on; with all necessary chambers and halls.

Besides these six supreme courts, there are many others resident at Peking, the chief of which are, first the court called Hanlin-Iven, that is, a grave flourishing with learning and sciences. This court contains a great number of learned mandarines of pregnant wits, divided into five classes, and making five courts; the members of which are teachers and preceptors of the prince who is to succeed in the empire, whom they instruct in virtue and learning, according to his age. They write all the transactions at court or in the empire, which deserve to be transmitted to posterity. They compose the general history of the kingdom; and they are properly the king's men of learning whom he chuses to be counsellors.

Another court, called Guerku-Kien, is the royal school of all the empire, which has care of all those batchelors and students to whom the emperor has granted some priviledge to make them equal to batchelors.

Another court called cotao, is appointed to tell the emperor what faults he commits in government; and they are so bold in this particular, that they often expose themselves to the hazard of banishment or death, in telling their prince the truth, either by way of memorial or by word of mouth; of which there are many examples in the Chinese histories. And it has happened that kings have mended their faults, and generously rewarded those that reproved them.

Besides these courts already mentioned, each province has a sovereign court on which all the others depend: the president has the title of viceroy; it belongs to him to govern both in peace and

war, and give the emperor and six sovereign courts an account of all things of note. Some vice-roys have the government of two, three, or four provinces, especially on the frontiers of Tartary. Besides the vice-roy, there is in every province, a visitor, and another officer of great note, who has the immediate command of all the troops in the province. There is likewise no metropolitan city without its civil and criminal court, which acts in the same affairs, as the six sovereign courts at Peking. Every province is divided into territories, and each territory has a mandarine, who is, as it were, a visitor or inspector of all that is well or ill done within his district. It is his duty to cause the governors of cities and towns to pay in the emperor's duties punctually.

The number of learned mandarines throughout the empire is thirteen thousand six hundred and forty-seven, and that of the martial eighteen thousand five hundred and twenty, in all thirty-two thousand one hundred and sixty-seven. The distribution of whose employments is so proper, that it seems the legislators omitted nothing that was necessary; and foresaw all the inconveniencies that might happen. All the mandarines here mentioned, have their employments for three years, which being expired, they rise to others better; none of them has servants or officers of their own, but when they come to the place of their government, must receive those that are offered and maintained by the public, that there may be no confidants, thro' whose means, presents might be received, or justice sold. When a mandarine's father or mother dies, he must resign his employ to mourn three years, sleeping for a long time upon a little straw by the tomb, eating for some months nothing but rice boiled in water, and wearing for the first year

a garment of sack-cloth; which delightful custom the emperors themselves observe.

CH A P. XX.

Of the Chinese language; of their ingenuity in the liberal arts; of their civility, politeness, funerals, ceremonies, and other customs; of their habit and weapons; of the great wealth and plenty of the empire; and of the means by which the Tartars possessed themselves of it.

THE Chinese language differs from all others in the world, and has none to compare to it for the antiquity of its writing. They have not, like other nations, an alphabet of a few characters, of which to compose words, but every letter with them expresses a whole word. Another thing wonderful in their tongue, is that their words are all monosyllables, and are not originally above three hundred and twenty; but considered with their accents, they are copious enough to express all their meaning; for which purpose in writing, they use no less than fifty-four thousand four hundred and nine characters. In the opinion of the missionaries, it is the easiest to learn of all the languages in the east, which appears probable when we consider that they who go into China, with only two years application, preach, hear confessions, and write in that language as if it were natural to them, tho' they go into those parts well advanced in years. No kingdom in the world is so full of universities as China; in these, there are above ninety thousand students, ten thousand licentiates, whereof six or seven thousand meet every three years at Peking, where, after severe examination,

three

three hundred and sixty-five are admitted to the degree of doctors.

The Chinese chronicles begin about two hundred years after the flood, and are continued to this time by a succession of authors. They have abundance of books of moral philosophy, others that treat of nature, its properties, and accidents, several others of the mathematics, and concerning the art of war, most ingenious, and entertaining romances, infinite volumes of history, and examples of the obedience of children towards their parents, of the fidelity of subjects towards their king, of husbandry, of fine speeches, of delightful poems, of tragedies, of comedies, and upon an infinity of other subjects too tedious to relate.

But there are five books they chiefly regard, and hold in as great veneration as we do the holy scripture. The first of them is called the Chronicle of the five ancient kings; the second is the Ritual, and contains most of the laws, customs, and ceremonies of the empire; the third is the book of verses, romances, and poems; the fourth book was composed by Confucius, and contains the history of his native country in the nature of annals, in which he represents to the life, the actions of virtuous and wicked princes; the fifth, which is the most ancient, and supposed to be wrote by Fohi, deserves to be read and valued for the excellent sentences and moral precepts it contains. They have one book more of equal authority with these others, which is an extract or epitome of the other five.

The wit of the Chinese is no less wonderful and sublime in mechanic arts, than it is in sciences; but as a mean price is no way agreeable to curious workmanship, all their study is to make their work look fine, because the buyers are very sparing in

their expences; but if the reward were suitable to the labour, they would do wonders. Their writing is from the right hand to the left, and the lines do not go across, but from the top of the leaf to the bottom. Their manner of printing is as follows; the composition being writ out in fair characters, the paper, which is extraordinary thin and transparent, is pasted on a board of pear-tree or apple-tree, as smooth as possible may be, with the writing next the board, that when printed, the letters may come right again; then the characters are cut with a small tool or pen-knife, so that their lines may rise, and the wood about them be lower than they.

The nobility of China is of two kinds, namely, that of the sword, and of the gown: that of the sword continues hereditary from father to son, while the same family that raised it, continues upon the throne; but when a new family succeeds, then they are all put to death, and new ones are raised, as happened about a century ago. That acquired by the gown, continues no longer than during the life of the possessor, the sons and grandsons of the Chinese doctors being frequently very poor, and forced to be retailers or artificers, or else by being scholars to stand candidates for the same honours their predecessors enjoyed. However, there still flourishes a family, which has not only preserved its honour, for above twenty-two ages, but is at present equally honoured by the great men and commonalty; so that it may truly be accounted the antientest family in the world. It is the family of Confucius, who lived under the third imperial family, five hundred and fifty-one years before the birth of Christ. The ancient kings gave the race of Confucius the title of Que-cum, which is something like a duke, and they continue like sovereigns, free from all taxes in the province of

Xantung, and city of Kio-feu, where he was born.

Many volumes might be filled with the Chinese civilities and ceremonies. They have a book which contains above three thousand, and it is wonderful to see how exactly they observe them. At all entertainments, the master of the house, tho' he be a great lord, and of more eminent quality than any of the guests, yet gives the upper hand to his elders; these give it to them that come from far off; and all of them to strangers. They also out-do all other countries in their care of making a good appearance, for there is no man so poor, but is decently and neatly clad. The women are so modest and reserved, that these virtues seem to be born with them; they live in perpetual retiredness, never uncover their hands, and if they are obliged to give any thing to their brothers or kindred, they hold it with their hand covered with the sleeve.

The Chinese women think it a beauty, and value themselves upon little feet; and to acquire this beauty, they have their feet wrapped up when they are new born, and bound so hard, that they become almost cripples: tho' this be the chief beauty they boast of, yet they do not expose or shew it, for modesty will not permit them to wear such short coats as to discover any part of their shoes. Their features and complexion are not inferior to the European women, and tho' they have small eyes lying deep, and flat noses, yet they do not look amiss. This their retired life is the cause that they marry, if we may so call it, blindfold, for the bride and bridegroom never see one another till the day she is brought to his house; and they are often contracted and promised in the cradle, being generally much of an age. The woman's portion is no other than her person; and that is enough, if she is virtuous. By the laws of

the kingdom, no man may marry a woman of his own family, tho' the kindred be never so remote. The Tartars do not buy their wives, but receive portions, tho' very inconsiderable; when any one marries his daughter to his equal, the portion is not above eighty cows, eighty horses, and eighty garments.

The outward appearance of the Chinese is very grave and modest: to turn the head suddenly about, would look among them as if a man's brain were light; oaths, or words that have any taste of immodesty, are never heard; to make love or play the gallant, are things so far from being used, that they have no words to express them. It is a received maxim among them, that to draw a sword against one another, is not the part of men; and that war is nothing but a wildness reduced to rules, which the savage beasts have not. They are very ingenious and sharp witted, and the poor commonalty exceed belief, in cunning and artifice, taught them by nature to get their living. If they do not like one profession, at the year's end they take to another, being handy at every thing; they are very expert at games, such as cards, dice, chess, tables.

The laws of the empire are so severe to oblige parents to give their children good education, that if it happens any of them commits a crime, and cannot be taken, the magistrate secures the father, and bastinadoes him for not teaching his son good manners. The government also takes care of the œconomy of families for the public good. They are much addicted to superstition and auguries: they look upon it as a very ill omen to have churches erected to the true God, in the country or villages, as fearing some of the people should die upon it. No one is permitted to build his house higher

higher than his neighbour's, for fear of taking away his good fortune.

Before the Tartars ruled the Chinese, they wore their hair long, winding it about on their poll; but since the Tartars govern, they have been all commanded to cut it off upon pain of death, and to go after the Tartar fashion with their heads shaved; their large garments with wide sleeves, are also forbidden, to bring up the Tartar fashion, which the Chinese do highly resent. Their shirt is laced under the right arm, on the sides, or under the throat; it reaches down half way the leg, with long narrow sleeves over it; they wear wide breeches down to their heels; the hose they generally wear are of coarse silk. The nobility add to the shirt a long black garment, which when buttoned from under the right arm to the feet, is girt with a silver ribbon; over this, they wear a cloak with wide sleeves, buttoned upon the breast, but the learned have theirs long, contrary to the Tartars, who use it very short.

In war, the Chinese carry bows and arrows, and a long scymiter; fire-arms are used but little, yet muskets begin to be brought in play by the emperor's order. Tho' cannon had been long found out in China, yet it was not well cast nor proportioned, for which reason the emperor had it all new cast, under the direction of F. Verbiest, a Flemming of the society of Jesus. The Chinese soldiery consists of horse divided under eight standards, each of ten thousand men, and to every standard belongs a general. This profession descends from father to son, for the emperor does not only allow them competent pay according to the station, but also rice for the whole family, without sparing, because all is furnished by the provinces, which pay it as a tribute.

Tho'

Tho' in China gold be plentiful and very good, yet they do not use it as money, but pass it by weight as a commodity; the same happens with the silver brought in by strangers, especially that which comes from America, by means of the Spaniards; in this they pay the emperor's taxes, in whose treasury it remains buried, and in those of the rich men of the empire; for the Chinese stand in need of nothing from abroad.

Among the Chinese, the being well buried is a thing on which the happiness of the dead, and of their posterity seems to depend. Hence it is that, never trusting to their own children, every man whilst living, and in health, provides himself with two things more particularly; these are, a coffin to be put into when dead, and a lucky place to lay it in. The coffin must not be narrow, but large and stately, and all the outside of it varnished, carved, and adorned with gold (if they are able) bestowing upon it what would cost a thousand crowns. The fortunate place is generally appointed by the fortune-tellers, about the bottom of some mountain; for no man may be buried within the city.

As soon as the father is dead, the son in a raging manner, tears down the curtains of the bed, and with them covers the body, then he falls down with his hair loose, and soon after sends his servants to the kindred and friends, giving them notice in writing that he has lost his father: to receive them, the greatest room is put into mourning, with mats or white hempen cloth, for that is their colour for mourning. The body meanwhile, being wrapt up in fine thin silk, is put into the coffin, which is afterwards close shut, the chinks stopped up with pitch, and the outside all adorned with stars of gold. Then placing it at the upper end of the room, the son stands by it, clad

clad in a doleful manner in plain hempen cloth, with a cap of the same, his feet wrapped in straw, coarse cotton cloths about his ears, and two girdles of thick rope about his body, the ends hanging down to the ground: this doleful appearance is the least part of his mourning; for the first night he lies close by the coffin upon straw, which is his only bed for several months; all dainties are banished his table, particularly flesh, and he is obliged to continue the appearance of mourning for three years.

Navigation, and plenty of all sorts of commodities found in a kingdom, are certainly the two sources of trade. China has these two in such a degree, that no kingdom can equal, much less exceed it. The quantity of gold is so great in all its provinces, that instead of being converted into coin, it is made a commodity. As for silver, their avarice and industry in gathering of it, are as ancient as the empire; and therefore the quantity they have gathered must be prodigious, for what comes once into the country can never go out again, the laws that prohibit it are so severe. There are in this kingdom, abundance of copper, iron, and tin mines, and of several other metals; here likewise is the best silk in the world, and in such plenty, that the ancients called China the kingdom of silk: it is of two sorts, the natural and the artificial; the natural is made by worms in the fields and upon trees, which they gather and spin, but it is not so good as the artificial, when they feed the worms in the house for forty days upon mulberry-leaves.

Their wax is the finest and whitest that may be: it is of two kinds, that from the bees, and another kind produced from certain large trees in a wonderful manner; a certain stinging insect of the bigness of a flea, lays its eggs on these trees, which

which afterwards producing worms, they gnaw, pierce, and bore to the very pith, and convert their nourishment into wax as white as snow, which they drive out to the mouth of the hole; where it remains congealed in drops by the wind and cold.

Cotton is very plentiful in this kingdom, for which reason they make but very little use of wool, unless for blankets for beds; and some of the poorer sort cover themselves with the skin and wool together in the winter time, while the rich are clad in finest furs. As for flesh, fish, fruit, and other provisions, they have all those sorts we have in Europe, and many more that we have not; and the plenty appears by the small price they bear. There are several sorts peculiar to the country, but chiefly we shall mention the herb tea, which is the most valued drink among the Chinese, as chocolate is among the Spaniards; there being no visit where they do not use a great quantity of it. Tho' it has the name of an herb, yet the leaves are gathered from little trees, the best growing in the province of Chiekiang; in summer, they bear a flower of an agreeable smell, but the leaves must be carefully gathered in winter. First they are a little heated in a copper caldron over a gentle fire; then they are laid upon a fine mat, and turned with the hands; then they are set over the fire again, till they are thorough dry; and lastly, they are put into leaden vessels that they may not evaporate, but be preserved from moisture. The infusion is agreeable and wholesome when the leaves make it green; but there is such difference of its virtue, and such variety, that there is some of it sold for ten pence the pound, and some for ten shillings.

There is also rhubarb in China; it grows in the moist places, and upon a sort of reddish ground; the leaves are generally two spans long, downy and narrow at bottom; the stem rises a foot and bears

bears flowers like large violets ; the root is sometimes three feet long and as thick as a man's arm ; when fresh it is bitter in the highest degree. They have likewise abundance of flowers and very beautiful ; those peculiar to the country are more for shew than smell, and they set them between the rows of bricks in their courts, to make fine walks.

China, upon account of its great extent, enjoys all the several climates without the barbarity of the one extreme, or the too much luxury of the other. It is not all plain nor all mountainous, but is every where so fully cultivated, that it looks like one continued garden ; some even of the high mountains are most delightful to behold at a distance, being all cut as it were in terraces from the bottom to the top. As for plains, there are some so large, that to shew their extent it is enough to say, there is one that reaches from Nanking to Peking, for several hundred miles, without one foot of land either barren by nature, or for want of improvement ; and it is so fruitful naturally, that there are two harvests in a year, and whilst they reap, they sow again.

The air in China is generally very healthy, and their seasons regular ; at Peking the winter lasts longer than is usual, in bare forty degrees of latitude. What by the extremity of the cold and the nature of the water, from the middle of November, the ice is so thick and strong on the rivers and lakes, that it bears horses and carts, and does not thaw till after February. In the southern parts, there blows such a pestilential wind, that it destroys very many.

Having given an account of the climate, government, and customs of China, we shall now relate how the eastern Tartars possessed themselves of this great empire. During the reign of the family Mim, the last of the Chinese race, the strength of the

the empire being employed in securing the frontiers next to Tartary; eight captains of robbers took the field, and in as short time raised eight armies; these contending among themselves for the sovereignty, reduced themselves to two, who separated, the one taking the rout of the northern provinces, and the other of the southern. The emperor's army marching against those that attacked the northern was defeated, and the city they came to relieve destroyed by an inundation of a river by which three hundred thousand souls perished. Encouraged by this success, Li, the captain of the robbers, assumed the title of emperor, and marched for Peking with an army of three hundred thousand men. Having debauched many of the people to his interest, the gates were thrown open, tho' there was in the city a garrison of seventy thousand men. The emperor, not knowing of any thing that had happened, was then mortifying himself with fasting among his bonzes, but understanding by the sudden approach of the enemy that he was betrayed, he retired into his garden and hanged himself, at the age of thirty-six; and with him the empire and all the family, to the number of eighty thousand, all perished by degrees.

Li, having thus secured the capital city, marched against the Chinese general, who still opposed him with an army of sixty thousand men. This general, to revenge his own injuries, and the emperor's death, sent a solemn embassy to the Tartar prince, inviting him to march with his army against the usurper. The Tartar flew, rather than marched, with sixty thousand men into China, with which he soon defeated the usurper Li, but died before he had established peace, leaving a son under age, under the tuition of his brother. The Chinese were in hopes that the Tartars, loaded with booty, would return home, but were soon undeceived;

undeceived; for they coming to Peking in 1643, refused to go any farther, saying, the empire was due to their valour: thus the infant, but six years of age, entered the city in triumph, being received with the applause of the people, who placing him on the throne, saluted him emperor.

The Tartars having subdued the northern provinces, marched to relieve the southern, and in a few years having defeated all the captains of robbers, they brought the whole empire under their subjection; and to secure their possession, and gain the love of the people, they maintained the former laws, statutes, and politics of the Chinese, altering but very little, and giving great encouragement to the learned men.

The cold at Peking being now too sharp for Gemelli, he resolved to leave that place, and on Saturday the 19th of November, he went to F. Grimaldi, to desire him to procure three mules for his journey. Next day he took leave of all the fathers, and received a pass from F. Grimaldi, to prevent any one from molesting him on his return from court. Having agreed with the muleteer, and given him all the hire of the three mules (for in China they will be paid before hand) he set out on Tuesday the 22d in the afternoon, and passed thro' the town of Lupuxan, which has a good wall, and two gates plated with iron; near it they passed over a stately stone bridge, half a mile long, and adorned every two paces with handsome little stone lions on both sides. Here they found a Tartar, attended by a footman and a page, and several servants, going the same road, so that afterwards they travelled together. But having travelled the same road on his journey to court, whatever is most remarkable in it was mentioned before, only the presence of the Tartar made the inn-keeper more observant to serve them well, and they had plenty

plenty of good provisions very cheap, a hare costing only three half-pence. and a pheasant sixpence.

After travelling thirty-four days, they came on Sunday the 25th of December to Nanchianfu, from whence the passage to the Macao is by water. Gemelli hoping to keep his Christmas cheerfully with the catholics of this place, left his mules, and passing the river in a boat, took up his quarters in the house of the jesuits, but the superior being still at Canton, he spent the day alone and melancholy. Next day having hired a boat to carry him to Nanganfu for about four ducats, he set out before noon, and arrived there on Wednesday the 11th of January, 1697. Sunday the 15th, after dinner, he went aboard another boat for Canton, two women and five men rowing him along; and being now come into the southern latitudes, he felt the heat very excessive. Continuing his voyage for nine days, he arrived at Canton on Tuesday the 24th, having travelled by land and water from Peking, about fourteen hundred miles.

Gemelli came to Canton with a resolution of going to Emuy in the province of Fokien, and there embarking for Manila; but finding the loading of Canton already gone, and hearing there was a Manila ship at Macao, he changed his mind, having an offer of a passage in that ship with three Spaniards who belonged to it, and who had come to Canton to lay out an hundred and eighty thousand pieces of eight for Chinese merchandise. They were amazed at his boldness in coming to Canton without a pass, and then going on to Peking, whereas the customer would not allow them to proceed till they had given him thirty pieces of eight for a pass.

At this time preparations were making for the Chinese festival of the new year, which always begins with the new moon that falls next to the

5th of February; and on that day, according to them, the sun enters a sign they call the Resurrection of the Spring. They reckon twelve lunar months, one of twenty-eight days, and the other of thirty; and every fifth year they make an intercalary month, adding all the days lost in the former, so that they come even with the sun's course. The weeks they divide like us, according to the number of the planets; they reckon the day from midnight to midnight, dividing it into twelve equal parts, each of which are subdivided into an hundred parts. At this time their new year fell out on the 3d of February, and several days before the courts and shops were all shut up, to give way to the festival. On the last night of the old year, in all houses, the sons kneel before their fathers, the younger brothers before the elder, the servants before their masters, touching the ground with their heads, and performing the other ceremonies of the country. The women do the same among themselves; but before they require this duty of their children, the masters of the families pay it to their ancestors, touching the ground three times before their pictures. In the morning of the new year, long before day, the most superstitious of them went to those pagods they had a devotion for, to burn sweets before the idols; after which they use to pay visits to their friends, which is sufficiently performed by leaving it written on a piece of red paper, that they were there to wait on them.

A few days after came on the festival of the Lanthorns, which is the most sumptuous among the Chinese: the original of this festival is uncertain, but it is celebrated by rich and poor with great expence. In every ward or quarter of the city some figure of their idols was set up, about which were several persons disguised, with preposterous habits and masks; in these dresses they went

about the town upon asses or a-foot, with a long procession before them of lanthorns on long poles. The lanthorns were in the form of several creatures, and well lighted within with several lamps; all this was attended with noisy instruments of brass and drums. The chief part of this solemnity is to be seen in the pagods and the palaces of great lords, where there are lanthorns that cost fifteen or twenty pistoles, and some no less than two or three hundred crowns. They are hung up in the stateliest halls, some of them being twenty cubits square, and illuminated within by a vast number of lamps and candles, whose light sets off their paintings, and the smoke gives motion to the figures, which with wonderful art run round, leap, and go up and down within the lanthorn. There are to be seen horses galloping, carts drawn, men at work, ships under sail, armies marching, &c.

Gemelli being resolved to go for Manila, aboard the Spanish vessel then riding at Macao, he accordingly ordered his affairs for to leave Canton. Saturday the 3d of March, setting out in a large boat, they arrived at Macao three days after about noon, where waiting a month for the silks which the Spaniards had bought at Canton, he in the mean time provided the necessaries for the voyage.

C H A P. XXI.

The author's voyage from Macao to the Philippine islands, with a description of these islands, an account of their first inhabitants, their customs and manners, and of the fruits and trees produced in that climate; an account of the Spanish government at Manila, and of the revenues these islands yield to the king of Spain.

IT was now the 7th of April, when the captain of the ship being ready to sail, gave a noble farewell feast to his friends, at which Gemelli was present. Next day, being delivered from the troublesome custom-house officers, after dinner, when the tide served, they weighed anchor, and having saluted the last fort with five or six guns, they held on their way. That night there came up a bark with some bales of silk for the captain, according to his orders, he chusing this method of loading his vessel, that he might be free from the payment of the customs. After all the silks were got aboard, they proceeded in their voyage, and arrived at Manila on Tuesday the 8th of May. Gemelli landed, and took up his lodging with the rector of the college, but was no sooner ashore but he found an adjutant sent by the governor, who told him, he expected him at his palace. He went thither immediately, and was courteously received, and treated with sweetmeats, and the promise of any thing he should stand in need of.

Manila is seated in fourteen degrees and forty minutes of north latitude; for this reason the days and nights never vary above an hour winter and summer, but it is excessive hot, being under the torrid zone. It stands upon a point of land between

twixt the sea and a river that runs out of the lake ; it has six gates, and the wall next the river is strengthened with five little towers with iron guns ; but on the side next the land is a noble bulwark. The palaces in this place, tho' they be all of timber above the first floor, yet are beautiful to behold for their handsome galleries ; the streets are broad, but frequent earthquakes had spoiled their uniformity, several houses and palaces being overthrown. The number of souls in Manila are supposed to be about three thousand, but of such different mixtures, as to qualities and colour, that they are distinguished by several strange names. The women here dress in the Spanish habit ; but the common sort have no need of taylors, for a piece of Indian stuff, wrapt about their middle, and hanging down, serves for a petticoat, and another from the waist upwards for a waistcoat. The legs and feet stand in no need of shoes, by reason of the heat. Tho' Manila itself be small, yet if we include its suburbs, it will appear large ; for near one of the gates is the habitation of the Chinese merchants : here are found all arts and trades, so that all the citizens are worth runs thro' their hands, thro' the fault of the Spaniards and Indians, who apply themselves to nothing. The Spaniards keep these Chinese very much under, not suffering them to be in Christian houses at night, and obliging them to be without light in their houses and shops. Over the bridge that is on the river are other suburbs, to the number of fifteen, inhabited by Indians, Tagalis, and other nations, under the government of an alcade. In the space between these hamlets, on both sides of the river, as far as the lake of Bahi, there are gardens, farms, and country-houses. In this city are four monasteries, and a college of jesuits, where were about forty collegians studying humanity, philosophy, and

and divinity. The cathedral is large, but not well adorned within; the quire is near the great gate where the archbishop sits, whose revenue is sixty thousand pieces of eight a year.

The city Manila is the seat of government for all the Philippine islands, which tho' very remote from Europe, and from his catholic majesty's court, to whom they are subject, yet are excellently governed. For spirituals, there is an archbishop at Manila chosen by the king. As for the inquisition, there is a commissary appointed by that court at Mexico. For the temporal government there is a governor, with the title of captain-general, whose authority lasts eight years, and four judges and a solicitor for life. This court does not only receive appeals from the common magistrates of the city, but from all the islands. The governor's salary is thirteen thousand three hundred pieces of eight; and were not the Philippine islands so remote, it would be coveted by the chief grandees, because his government is unlimited, the jurisdiction large, the prerogatives not to be paralleled, the profit unknown, and the honour greater than that of viceroy in the Indies.

This grandeur and power is somewhat eclipsed by a dreadful trial they must go thro' when they get a successor; the accusers do not then examine the heinousness of offences, but the sums received in eight years; punishing the purse instead of the person. They have sixty days allowed them, after proclamation made thro' the provinces, to bring in their complaints, and thirty days to prosecute before the judge, who is generally the successor in the government, by special commission from the king and his supreme council of the Indies; therefore the judge having received all informations, without deciding any thing, returns all the proceedings to court. The four judges are subject to the same

trial, which is sometimes so rigorous, that they proceed to imprisonment, without respect to the greatness of the post possessed by the person. In short, since the islands were conquered, but two of the governors have returned to Spain, all of them having either broke their hearts at their trial, or died with hardships by the way. It is true, the council of the Indies has moderated this rigor, ordering that the governors be not imprisoned, but that the informations being taken, they be sent into Spain.

The many islands depending upon the government of Manila were called Philippines in 1543, by the general Luis Lopez de Villa Lobos, in honour to prince Philip then heir to the crown of Spain. What their antient name was is uncertain; yet some affirm they were called islands of Luzones, all of them taking their name from the biggest, which is Manila or Luzon; others call them Manilas, a name known ever since Ptolemy, as some will have it. A ship coming from America to these Philippines, when she makes land, must of necessity see one of the four islands of Mindanao, Leyte, Ibabao, and Manila, because they front that vast ocean for above six hundred miles, lying in a semicircle: besides these four already named, there are six others, large and populous; these being the ten most remarkable islands said to have been mentioned by Ptolemy. Among these ten there are the same number of small ones, all peopled; and besides a great many smaller, partly inhabited, and partly desert.

All these islands are in the torrid zone, between the equinoctial and the tropic of Cancer. When the Spaniards first came to Manila they found three sorts of people; on the sea-coasts there lived and ruled Malay-Moors, come, as they said, from Borneo; others possessed the low countries, and were called Bisay-Negrillos; these are mere barbarians,

and

and feed upon such fruit and roots as the mountains afford, and upon all they can kill, even to monkies, snakes, and rats. Except the Malayes, the other inhabitants still possess the greater part of these islands, the king of Spain not having one man in ten that owns his government; and even in the island of Manila there is no landing for fifty leagues along the shoar for fear of the blacks, who are most inveterate enemies to the Europeans.

The island Manila, together with some smaller ones adjacent, is divided into several provinces, and the Indian inhabitants who are tributary pay taxes in rice and gold, and are obliged to fell wood in the mountains, for building the king's great ships. The product of the island is some gold, abundance of wax, civet, cotton, sulphur, wild cinnamon, coco, rice even on the mountains, good horses, cows, buffaloes, deer, and wild boars. The many islands in the Archipelago make the channel for sailing very narrow, and the currents so strong, that sometimes they will make the largest ships turn round, and carry them out of their course. Not far from Manila is Capul, three leagues in compass, the soil fruitful, pleasant, and commodious for the Indians. Eight leagues north-west from the mouth of the streight is Ticao, an island eight leagues in compass, inhabited by Indians. Four leagues west of Ticao is Burin, five miles in compass; its inhabitants are counted in the parish of Masbate, another island south of it, and not far distant from Ticao; it is thirty leagues in compass, and eight in breadth, inhabited by about two hundred and fifty Indian families, which pay tribute in wax, salt, and civet. Here are such rich gold mines, that the mate of the galeon aboard of which Gemelli went over, going ashore to one of them, in a very short time dug out an ounce and a quarter of pure gold. Fifteen leagues from

Manila is the island of Marinduque; it is eighteen leagues in compass, high, and abounding in coco and other fruit-trees. Mindora is about eight leagues from Manila, and five from Marinduque; this island is seventy leagues in compass; the land here is high and mountainous, abounding in coco and all sorts of fruit-trees, but rice grows only in some parts: in Mindora and Luban, another small island five leagues in compass, they reckon seventeen hundred inhabitants who pay tribute. Beyond Luban northwards there is no island of note, but west of it are the Calamianes, a province made up of seventeen islands all subdued. Beyond the Calamianes, in sight of the high mountains of Mindora, are the five islands of Cuyo, not far distant from one another; in them are about five hundred tributary families. Next is the island of Panay, an hundred leagues in compass, containing about sixteen thousand three hundred and sixty one tributary Indians, and fourteen parishes belonging to the fathers of St. Augustine. Between the two great islands of Manila and Mindanao is first Sama, one hundred and thirty leagues in compass, and inhabited by about five hundred families. It is mountainous and craggy, but fruitful in the few plains there are; there grows in it a plant of a prodigious virtue for curing many diseases; for which at first the Dutch gave double its weight in gold. The next island is Leyte, ninety miles in compass, and well peopled on the east side, by reason of the fruitful plains, which yield a hundred and sometimes two hundred for one. The people are under the care of the fathers of the society, and have two good customs, the one to entertain one another mutually when they travel, the other, never to alter the price of provisions upon any dearth. The third island under the care of the fathers of the society is Bohol, about forty leagues in compass; when the Spaniards

Spaniards first conquered it, there were three thousand families of warlike people in it, but since Manila is become the seat of government, Zebu has decayed; but several other smaller islands in its neighbourhood are subject to it.

In all the islands here mentioned there are about two hundred and fifty thousand Spaniards and Indians subject to the crown of Spain, tho' scarce the twelfth part of the inhabitants be conquered. Married men are taxed ten reals, others from eighteen to sixty years are rated at five reals; likewise maids from twenty-four to sixty pay the same. The king's revenue is not quite four hundred thousand pieces of eight; which not being sufficient for the pay of four thousand soldiers, and the extravagant salaries of ministers, he lays out two hundred and eighty thousand that come from New Spain.

These islands are rich in pearls, excellent ambergris, whereof there was once a piece found weighing one hundred pounds; cotton, and choice civet; but gold is the chief and greatest treasure, for in the mountains are rich mines, and the rivers have it mixed in their sand: in all there is to the value of two hundred thousand pieces of eight a-year gathered without the help of fire. As for Manila, the Author of nature placed it so equally between the wealthy kingdoms of the east and west, that it may be accounted one of the greatest places of trade in the world. Here are found the silver of New Spain and Peru; for the ship that returns from Acapulco is loaded with silver for the west, the diamonds of Golconda, the cinnamon of Ceylon, the pearls and rich carpets of Persia, and the curious workmanship of China.

The air in the Philippine islands is hot and moist; the heat is not so violent as in the dog-days in Italy, but more troublesome by reason of the

sweat and weakness it causes. The dampness is greater, because the land is generally watered with rivers, lakes, and pools, and there fall great rains the most part of the year. It is wonderful to observe, that first it rains and lightens, and the thunder is heard after the rain is over. It is further to be observed, that in this climate no lice or other vermin breed upon Europeans, tho' they wear dirty shirts several months; but it is otherwise with the Indians, who have great store. The great dews that fall in fair weather contribute towards making the country unhealthy; for it is such, that shaking a tree sometimes it falls like rain; this does no harm to the natives, who live to eighty or an hundred years of age. At Manila there is no eating or sleeping without sweating; to avoid this the richer sort have their little country-houses to live at from the middle of March to the end of June: tho' the heat be violent in May, very often at night it thunders and lightens with mighty rains. Manila is also subject to great earthquakes, especially when they happen in dry weather. In September, 1627, there was such a terrible earthquake, that it levelled one of the greatest mountains; and by another in 1645, the third part of the city was overthrown, with the slaughter of three hundred souls, by a second.

The antient inhabitants of these islands received their language and characters from the Malays. In their writing they make use of three vowels, but pronounce five, and have thirteen consonants: they write upwards, beginning the first line at the bottom of the left side of the page; but they have almost forgot their own way of writing, and at present use the Spanish: as for their customs, they salute one another courteously, by taking off their heads the cloth they use for a cap; but when they meet any persons of greater quality, they bow their bodies low, clapping one or both hands on their

jaws, and at the same time lifting up one foot with the knee bent. The Tagalians or Biscayans always speak in the third person; and when they sit down they use no chair or stool, but rest wholly upon their heels, as people do to ease themselves in the fields, and they expect to be first spoke to that they may answer, looking upon it as ill manners to speak before their superiors.

The Indians are of a middle stature, well-shaped both men and women, of a purplish colour, inclining to black; they are not so intelligent and quick as those of the East Indies, who are excellent at any business, but particularly in trade and writing. The womens chief care and pride is to file and order their teeth, that they may grow even; they cover them with a black dye to preserve them, and the ladies of quality adorn them with little plates of gold. No man might be clad in red that had not killed another, nor in striped stuff till he had been the death of seven. On their arms they wore bracelets of gold or ivory, about their legs black cords, and on their hands abundance of rings. Besides all their garments, it is still in use among them to have their skins wrought after several manners. Their music and dancing are after the Chinese fashion; the dancing is an imitation of fighting, but all the motions are regular; the compositions in their language are pleasant and elegant enough; but their greatest delight is cock-fighting. Bathing is so much in fashion among them, that women new delivered use it; for this reason, their dwellings are all on the banks of rivers and lakes. Their religion is chiefly some traditions delivered from father to son, and preserved in songs, concerning the genealogy and heroic acts of their famous ancestors, by them stiled gods. But they have one principal God, by them called the God Maker. They adore

birds and beasts, the sun and moon, and not a rock, stone, promontory or river, but what they sacrifice to; nor any old tree, to which they do not pay divine honours. They tell abundance of fables concerning the creation of the world, and the first men that inhabited it.

There were no kings or lords of any great note in the Archipelago; every several precinct or petty dominion was called Barangai; for as the families came hither in a bark to seek dwelling-places, so they remained subject, either to the commander of the vessel, or to the head of the family, and from him took their name. The first law among them was to honour their ancestors, and especially father and mother: the head of the Barangai, with some of the antient men of it, judge of all causes whatsoever. As for theft, if the fact were made out, but the person not known, the parties accused had two ways of purgation; the first was, one after another, to take a stone out of a bason of boiling water, which whosoever refused to do, paid the value of the thing stolen; the other was to place all the accused near any deep river, with spears in their hands, and then make them run and cast themselves into it; he that came out first was reputed guilty, for fear of which many staid in till they were drowned.

Their arms offensive were bows and arrows, and lances or pikes with iron heads, of several shapes, or else of wood hardened at the fire, broad daggers with two edges, well-shaped, and trunks thro' which they were wont to dart poisoned arrows. They were greatly addicted to superstition, and if they found a snake on their cloaths they would never wear them again tho' they were new; and the same, if an owl sat in the night on their house; and nothing was ever undertaken by them without casting lots. When any one of them dies, not
only

only the kindred and friends, but hired people come to lament and make a dismal song; then the body being washed and perfumed, is wrapt up in more or less silks, according to its quality; the poor were buried in a grave in their own house, the rich in a coffin, made of one piece of precious wood, and closed so artificially that no air could get into it: others buried the dead in the fields, and made fires in the house for many days, that the dead man might not come to take those that were left alive.

All these islands are extremely well stored with birds and beasts. The tavan, a bird about the bulk of a hen, is remarkable for laying its eggs in the sand, and leaving them there to be hatched.

There are likewise several kinds of doves, and many of the birds called salangans, about the largeness of a swallow, whose nests are reckoned a delicious dish. There are great abundance of peacocks and birds of paradise, quails, and mountain-cocks. There is so great a number of wild buffaloes grazing about the plains, that a good hunter a horseback with a spear may kill ten or twenty in a day. The woods abound in deer, boars, wild goats, horses, cows, monkeys, civet-cats, and some snakes of a prodigious bigness.

In the woods are likewise abundance of trees bearing variety of fruit, but the soil does not agree with European fruits, and some vines that have been planted here never bring grapes to maturity: the trees that yield the greatest profit and pleasure are the palm-trees, of which they reckon forty several kinds. On some of the mountains of Manila there is abundance of wild nutmeg, and in the island of Mindanao there are many cinnamon-trees. The most wonderful thing of all is, that the leaves of some trees are said to become living creatures, with

wings, feet, and tail. The woods, which for ages have never felt an ax, are full of bees, which furnish the natives with honey and wax. In Manila the Indian fig is found, with leaves so long and broad, that there is no doubt but Adam might have made himself a cloak of a couple of them.

The Molucco islands lying within the line of the Spanish conquests, and having been formerly under the governor of Manila, whilst the crown of Portugal was united to that of Castile, it will be proper to give some account of them. Moloc is a Malay word, derived from the Hebrew Malach, signifying the chief of any thing; they are seated under the line, three hundred leagues east of Malacca, and as much south-west of Manila: they are five in number, and lie in such order that they are always in sight of one another. The first of them is on the north side, and called Ternate, six leagues and a half in compass; in it is a burning mountain, which has frequently done great mischief by its eruptions. The only product of the island, before the Spaniards came into it, was cloves and nutmegs; but afterwards the islanders, in hatred to the Spaniards, went about destroying all the trees. Two leagues from Ternate is the island of Tidore: it is seven leagues in compass, and a better soil, and more healthy than the other. The people are warlike, and can put to sea twenty or thirty great vessels, with six or seven thousand men. The principal commodity is clove, but at present the natives do not improve it. The third of these islands is Mutiel or Timor, lying directly under the line, and producing cloves. The fourth island is called Machien, and has a burning mountain like that at Ternate. It yields the Dutch much clove: they having four forts and a factory there. Baehian is the fifth and greatest island, being twelve leagues

in compass. Here is a burning mountain, and abundance of beasts and fowl, fruit of all sorts, tobacco, and sagu for common food.

These islands were first discovered by Ferdinand Magallan a Portuguese, who after sailing round America, and over the great South Sea, first discovered the islands known by the name of Ladrones, or of Robbers. A few days after he fell in with the first of the Philippines, and sailing on to the island of Butuan, he landed on Saturday before Passion Sunday, in Spain called Sunday of St. Lazarus, in the year 1521. On Friday the 26th of April, Magellan himself was killed, with some of his men, on the first attack of the island Matan; but one of his ships called the Victory, returned to Spain by the Cape of Good Hope, three years and some days after it had set out, with only eighteen men out of fifty-nine that sailed from the Moluccos. In 1571 the Spanish arms conquered Manila without any expence of blood, and on the 24th of June the foundation of the city was solemnly laid, and trade settled with China. After the Spaniards had settled themselves in Manila, they applied themselves to reduce the other islands, and every year receiving some supplies from New Spain, they brought most of the islands, in a few years, under subjection to their king.

A galeon being soon to sail for New Spain, whither Gemelli was desirous to go, he desired the governor to grant him a passage aboard it, which he very honourably did, notwithstanding there were several New Spanish merchants who were denied. Having spent a week in providing himself with necessaries, and taking leave of his friends, he went off in a boat for Cavite, a small town on the opposite side of the bay where the ship lay. There stands the arsenal and dock-yard, where two or

three hundred Indians, brought by force, work at galleons and other large ships, of about fifty-five and sixty spans length in the keel.

CHAP. XXII.

The author's long and dangerous voyage from Manila to Acapulco in America; a description of Acapulco; his journey from thence to Mexico, with an account of Mexico; its situation, riches, trade, number of inhabitants, fine buildings, &c. Some account of the antient and modern Indians; their habit and manner of writing. A description of the silver mines at Pachuca.

FRIDAY the 22d of June, the vessel having all its lading aboard, Gemelli embarked, and next day there were prayers for their good voyage: and most of the pilots being of opinion that the vessel was overloaded, the captain ordered that all the seamen that had two chests should put one of them ashore; for tho' the burden of the vessel was only fifteen hundred bales, they had put aboard two thousand two hundred, besides provisions and other necessaries. On Monday the 25th, the governor caused all the bales above the ship's burthen to be unshipped; but on Wednesday the 27th, and on Thursday, eight hundred barrels of water were cast away, the bales belonging to the governor's friends and acquaintance being put on board again. At last, on Friday the 29th, they set sail in presence of the governor; and on Friday the 10th of August, after coasting among the islands, and dropping anchor continually, they got out of the streight, and being come into the open sea, to their great satisfaction they coiled their cables between decks, being to cast anchor no more till they came

came into New Spain, and the boat was set adrift that it might be of no hindrance, because they had another in quarters in case of need, that is, in pieces ready to clap together. About break of day, on Thursday the 6th of September, they discovered four of the Marian islands, having been greatly tossed in a storm two days before, in which the captain exposing the image of St. Xaverius, had vowed to make an offering to the value of the main-sail, which was worth two hundred pieces of eight. These islands are at present called de Los Ladrones, upon account of the thievish nature of the inhabitants, who are of a gigantic stature, corpulent and very strong, and will sometimes clap five hundred weight on their backs as if it were nothing; they are great swimmers, and dive so swiftly that they will take fish. No token of any religion has been discovered in any of these islands.

Their language is different from that of the Philippines, and the soil is proper to produce all things necessary for man's sustenance. In this long voyage there is a strange variation of the needle observed, for which there has been no satisfactory reason assigned, in two hundred years that voyage has been used. The pilots observe this variation, when the sun is setting; for marking the true west point, they then see how the cardinal points of their card answer.

After having now spent six months at sea, and suffered greatly from the violence of that immense ocean, the cold of the latitudes they were obliged to run into, and the badness of their provisions, which all swarmed with maggots and vermin; on Monday, December 3d, they were all rejoiced to see a very long weed, with a root like an onion, which the sailors affirmed was a sign of land, it having been pulled up from the mouth of some river by the violence of the sea; upon the sight of this

this Te Deum was sung, and all persons congratulated one another with the sound of drums and trumpets, as if they had been in their port, whereas they were then seven hundred leagues from it. At length, on Saturday the 19th of January, 1698, they entered the port of Acapulco at the great channel, where all on board embraced one another with tears of joy, seeing themselves in their desired port, after a voyage of two hundred and four days and five hours.

On Sunday, three hours before night, the king's officers came on board, to whom was delivered the register or entry of all that was on board the galeon, to regulate the king's duties, which amounted to eighty thousand pieces of eight, besides the present to the viceroy. Having taken an account who Gemelli was, they expressed a great deal of civility, and offered their service to him. There being no inn at Acapulco, he was forced to go on Monday the 21st, to the Monastery of Nuestra Señora de la Guca of the Franciscans, by whom he was courteously entertained.

This city of Acapulco might more properly be called a poor village of fishermen than the chief mart of the South Sea, and port of the voyage to China; so mean and wretched are the houses, being made of nothing but wood, mud, and straw. It is seated at the foot of high mountains, which cover it on the east side, but render it very subject to distempers. The ill temper of the air, and the mountainous soil, oblige it to be supplied with provisions from elsewhere, which renders living dear there; the place, besides being dear, is dirty and inconvenient, so that it is inhabited by none but blacks and Mulattoes. The barren mountains in the neighbourhood are not without game, for there are deer, rabbits, and other creatures, and great variety of birds.

A Plan of the HARBOUR of ACAPULCO

on the Coast of Mexico

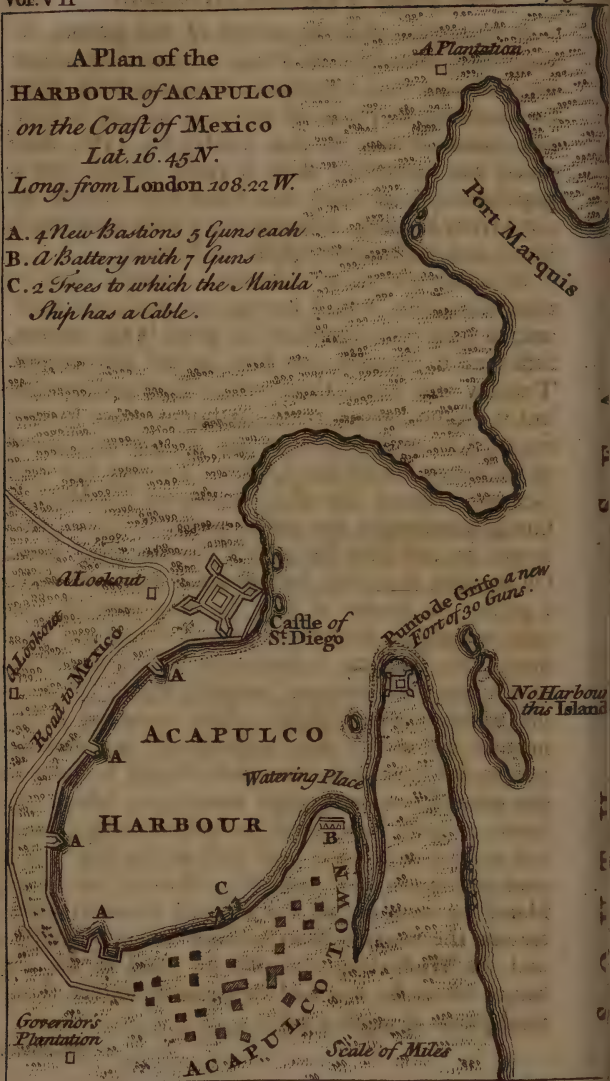
Lat. 16. 45 N.

Long. from London 108. 22 W.

A. 4 New Bastions 5 Guns each

B. A Battery with 7 Guns

C. 2 Trees to which the Manila
Ship has a Cable.



A few days after the arrival of the galeon, several ships came in from Peru, on board of which were officers and merchants, bringing with them two millions of pieces of eight to lay out in Chinese commodities; so that Friday the 25th, Acapulco was converted from a rustic village into a populous city, as many merchants had likewise arrived from Mexico, bringing along with them much silver, and many commodities of Europe.

Saturday the 2d of February, Gemelli went to view the castle, which having no ditch nor bastions, is only remarkable for its good brass cannon, sufficient to defend the fort against any enemy. Tuesday the 25th, there was a little earthquake, but it did no harm; these earthquakes are so very frequent at Acapulco, that the people are forced of necessity to build low houses. Tuesday the 12th Gemelli ordered his affairs to set out for Mexico, hiring three mules for ninety pieces of eight, tho' it was to cost him six reals a day for their meat. On Monday the 18th, having got a pass, and taken a guide, he set out at four in the afternoon, and after travelling nine miles up and down vast high mountains, he came to the inn of Atuxo, consisting of five thatched cottages, where a legion of gnats sucked his blood all night. After travelling in this manner for eleven days without any accommodation in the inns, and sometimes obliged to sleep on the ground, on very high mountains, where the snow covered him almost before morning; he at last arrived at Mexico, and entered the city over a causeway made upon the lake. Monday the 4th of March he went to pay his respects to count Montezuma the viceroy, who received him courteously; and on Wednesday the 6th he went to see the mint, where he was told they coined sixteen thousand pieces of eight a day.

Mexico,

Mexico, so called by the Spaniards, and by the Indians Tenoch-Titlan, is in the latitude of nineteen degrees and forty minutes, and in the midst of a valley almost flat, fourteen Spanish leagues in length from north to south, seven in breadth, and about forty in compass. On the east side of this valley is a large lake, into which several rivers and other waters fall; the ridge of mountains that inclose it on all sides, in the lowest place is forty-two thousand and five hundred Spanish yards above the level of the lake. The city is situated in a perfect plain, about the middle of the lake; the plat of it is square, and it looks like a curious chess-board, by reason of its long, wide, and well-paved streets, crossing one another at square angles. The compass is two leagues, being almost perfectly square, and having five causeways into it, being so many banks made in the lake without walls or gates. For excellent structures and ornaments of churches, it may be said to vie with the best in Italy, but for beautiful women it surpasses it.

Mexico contains about an hundred thousand inhabitants; but the greatest part of them blacks and Mulattoes, by reason of the vast number of slaves that has been carried thither; another reason, that all the lands being in the hands of churchmen, as well as the houses, the Spaniards and other Europeans finding no way to get estates real, as all discreet persons ought to do, will not easily be persuaded to marry, and generally they themselves became religious men. Thus, tho' the city is not large, there are within it twenty-two nunneries and twenty-nine monasteries of monks and friars of several orders, all richer than they ought to be. As an instance of the wealth of the churchmen there, the revenue of the cathedral is above three hundred thousand pieces of eight a year.

The

The weather in this city is very unequal all the year about, it being for the most part both cold and hot at the same time: that is, cold in the shade and hot in the sun. The soil, by reason of the great rains that fall, gives three crops in a year; but the third is called *Adventurera*; that is, accidental, because it fails sometimes. In short, Mexico must be allowed to be an excellent city, there never being any excess of cold or heat; and all the year round there are flowers and fruits of all sorts in its markets.

The antient histories of Mexico make mention of a flood, in which all men and beasts perished, excepting only one man and woman, who were saved in a boat; this couple, after the flood abated, coming to the foot of a mountain went ashore, and there had many children, among whose descendants they reckon fifteen heads of families, who happening to speak the same language, joined together, and went about to find some land to inhabit; when they had wandered an hundred and four years from place to place, they at last came to the place where Mexico now stands. After six of the most civilized of these fifteen nations had been settled there three hundred and two years, came the seventh, called Mexicans, from their prince called Mexi. The first king of them having reigned forty years; died without appointing his sons to succeed him, and in return for this his moderation, the chief men assembling, chose one of his sons, who marrying the daughter of a neighbouring king that formerly oppressed them, by that means procured peace and safety for his subjects. This, according to their histories, happened but about two centuries before the Spaniards came there, which was in the fourteenth year of the reign of Montezuma their ninth king; Cortes the Spanish general taking him prisoner, the Mexicans chose another king while

while he was alive; but this tenth and last king died a prisoner to the Spaniards. From this number of kings, and other circumstances, some writers have drawn a comparison betwixt the Mexican empire and the beast mentioned in the Revelations with seven heads and ten horns.

For want of letters, the ingenious Mexicans used symbols, or hieroglyphicks, to express corporeal things; and for others, other proper characters: and by these, for the benefit of posterity, they noted down every thing that happened. Their way of writing was from the bottom of the board or paper upwards, directly contrary to the Chinese. They had certain circles painted which contained the space of an age, divided into years, with the proper symbols: this age consisted of fifty-two solar years, of three hundred and sixty-five days each: the circle was divided into four chief parts, each containing thirteen years. This way of reckoning was not only observed in their years but in their months; for though their month was of twenty days, yet when they came to the number thirteen they began again: but this caused no confusion, for every one of the days of the month had its proper name; and since they allowed but twenty days to a month they made eighteen months in a year, and added five supernumerary days to bring it to agree with the sun's course: they likewise did not neglect the odd hours, but took notice of them at the end of their age.

The antient Mexicans believed the world would end with their age, and therefore, on the last day of it, they kneeled on the tops of their houses, with their faces towards the east, doubtfully expecting whether the sun would continue his course. When the first day appeared they solemnized it with drums and other instruments they used; giving thanks to God for having granted them another age. They
likewise

likewise kept as it were a jubilee every fourth year, on the 19th of May, on which was the festival of one of their idols; they fasted five days before it, and the priests abstained from their wives, and went about beating themselves in a penitential habit. All other people were clad in the same manner, and went in procession, begging one another's pardon. Upon the day appointed, a slave that was like the statue of the idol was sacrificed, and others with him. These captives, to make them more miserable, were fatted up some days before, and worshipped about the city like gods.

They had other festivals yet more detestable, as fleaing of a slave and clothing another with his skin whom they had led about the streets, shewing him to the people, and begging money for the temple. At other times they clad several slaves with idol's garments a whole year before the festival, leading them in the day time about the city that they might be adored like the idols, and keeping them shut up at night, feeding them plentifully, and sacrificing them at the year's end. Some years they butchered to the number of twenty thousand. Their temples were built after the manner of pyramids, ascending by stairs, and, for the most part, of clay, the idol being placed in a tabernacle, and, round the bottom, apartments built for the priests.

Their manner of cloathing was sometimes very barbarous: the soldiers, that they might appear the more dreadful to their enemies, stained their naked bodies, or else covered them with a whole lion's or tyger's skin, placing the head of the beast upon their own. They hung across them, like a shoulder-belt, a string of men's hearts, noses and ears, with a head at the end. The habit of the kings and princes of the blood was not amiss, if compared with that of the common sort, excepting only the bad practice of boring their under lip, to stick a gold nail or some other

other jewel in it. The habit of the Indians at present is a short doublet and wide breeches; on their shoulders they wear a cloak of several colours, which they call *tilma*, and which, crossing under the right arm, is tied upon the left shoulder, the ends making a great knot: instead of shoes some wear sandals; and, though all in rags and starving, they will not part with their hair. The women wear narrow coats, with figures of lions, birds, and other creatures, adorning them with curious duck's feathers.

The Indians at present are nothing near so ingenious as they were formerly, when they successfully applied themselves to the liberal arts and mechanics; but now they are altogether devoted to idleness, and apply themselves to nothing but cheating. They are naturally very fearful, but excessive cruel if well backed. The vices the Spaniards generally charge them with are, first, the want of sense of honour, for in their actions they shew nothing of it; being beastly in eating; lying on the bare ground; and dying without any concern: on the other side, they are used like slaves, for they only work in the mines; and what is worse, all they get is taken from them by the governors and other officers, notwithstanding the daily threats from court.

In Mexico the Spaniards have built a pretty large theatre, where plays are acted, the profits of which go to the maintenance of the hospital. The cathedral when finished will be a very noble structure; it is large, and has three vaulted isles supported on high pillars of stone: in the midst of it is the choir, curiously carved in sweet wood, with beautiful figures and feuillage, and four fine altars in the arms of the cross. About the church there are several chapels gilt. The front is extraordinary noble, with three gates. Historians tell us, that this church was founded by D. Ferdiand Cortes, on the very same ground where the heathen temple formerly stood.

Thursday,

Thursday, March 21, Gemelli rode three leagues out of town to see the celebrated garden of St. Angel, of the barefoot Carmelites, which, tho' not above three quarters of a Spanish league in compass, yet a river running thro' the midst of it makes it so fruitful, that only the European trees there planted yield a revenue of thirteen thousand pieces of eight. The church these fathers have there, tho' small, is all a meer mass of gold. Their library is one of the best in the Indies, containing about twelve thousand volumes.

On Holy Thursday, the 4th of April, three processions went out one after another; each of them carried images, with abundance of lights; and a company of armed men a-foot, besides others a-horseback, went before them with trumpets sounding distantly. Friday the 5th was the procession of Jerusalem, or Mount Calvary. About three in the morning three trumpets sounded a doleful tune, and then appeared a great many brothers with lights in their hands, and among them several persons whipping themselves; then followed a company of armed men, some of them a-horseback, carrying the sentence in writing, title, garment, and other tokens of the passion; then persons representing our Saviour, the blessed Virgin, St. John, St. Veronica, the good and the bad thief; then two representing Jewish priests on mules, and others, in very good order: in short, nothing was inferior to the magnificence of Europe; and as Mexico is full of churches and religious houses, a great part of the employment of the citizens is taken up with religious observances.

As Mexico is situated it is subject to be overflowed by the waters of its lakes, which run down in vast quantities from the mountains about it: this happened three times during the Indian kings; and the year after it was conquered by the Spaniards, the waters swelled so high that they were obliged to
make

make a new bank against them ; this not being a sufficient defence, they began to turn away the river Guatitlan, which did most harm. Another great inundation happening in the year 1580, the viceroy ordered some method to be formed to drain all the lake, but this was omitted upon account of the great expence. In 1667 there was so great a flood that the city was almost swallowed up, which made the carrying off the water to be thought of again. Ar-rigo Martinez, a European, having planned out the work, on November the 28th, 1607, after mass sung, the viceroy himself, after having taken a spade, began to dig. The number of Indians that wrought from the end of November till the 7th of May next year, was four hundred, seventy-one thousand, one hundred and fifty-four ; and those that made it their business to dress them meat were one thousand, six hundred and seventy-four. In 1611 the king demanded a particular account of the progress of the work from the viceroy, and he, by the advice of understanding people, answered, That they had taken wrong measures, and therefore all the expence was lost. After several other smaller attempts, in 1637, it was again proposed to carry on the work, and the geometricians declared that seventy millions, seven hundred, twenty-one thousand, five hundred and twenty-six cubical yards of earth must be dug to make way for four cubical yards of the water of the lake. Tho' they had continued working from the year 1637, yet, in the year 1698, there remained much more to do than had been done, and indeed they had rendered it impracticable ever to accomplish it in the method they proposed ; for carrying the canal, like a mine, under ground, the rivers no sooner swell than they fill it up with the stones and trees they carry along with them.

On Wednesday the 17th, Gemelli set out to see the mines of Pachuca, and next day, about noon, arrived

arrived there, and was entertained by the chief officer of the king's revenue, who, as soon they had dined, sent his son-in-law with him to the two nearest mines, about half a league distant, over a rough and craggy road. The depth of the first was two hundred and twenty-four English yards; of the other one hundred and ninety-five yards. Gemelli went down so far by five notched poles, but the miner would let him go no further for fear he should tumble down headlong; and indeed the poles were wet, and a man's foot might easily slip as he was finding out the notch. By these upright notched poles the miners, in several of the mines, carry up the ore upon their backs. Having rested a little he went to view the mine of the Trinity, reckoned the richest of all, persons of reputation affirming that, within ten years, forty millions of silver had been drawn out of it, nine hundred or one thousand men working there every day. In another mine, about one hundred and twenty yards deep, he resolved to see the veins of silver; but after going down five notched poles, and finding how likely it was to tumble down headlong, he thought of going up again, but the miner encouraged him, and telling him there was but a few poles to the bottom, he ventured to go down the rest, tho' with much fear, the miner going down before him with a light in his hand; yet sometimes he found it very difficult to clasp the pole with his arms and fix his feet on the notches; however, recommending himself to God, he went down three times as far as he expected, and came at last to the place where the miners were working at the ore with iron wedges. Having staid about two hours he went up again in much dread because of the bad ascent, and was nearly spent by the time he got to the top, which having gained he reflected upon the foolishness and rashness of the action, having never been so much afraid

in

in all the five years he had travelled among barbarous nations, and would not again have gone down into that place, where curiosity alone had led him, for two or three thousand pieces of eight. After dinner next day, they carried him to see the metal separated at the silver works. Saturday 26, he set out from Pachuca betimes, and next day arrived at Mexico.

All the plate dug out of the mines in New Spain must be carried to Mexico to be entered in the exchequer; and they say a million of pounds of sixteen ounces are entered in a year, besides what is slipped aside: out of this sum they coin every year seven hundred thousand marks, into pieces of eight, at this mint. The silver that is to be coined into these is to be again entered into the exchequer, there to pay to the king a real in a mark. It is coined into five different sorts of money; namely, pieces of eight, half pieces of eight, quarter pieces of eight, single reals, and half reals. Tho' every private citizen that has silver may have it coined into money, yet the mint is almost continually employed by merchants, who buy the metal from private persons, and pay two reals short of the value in a mark. There being some gold mixed with the silver, it is separated in a place apart, and coined in the same manner as the silver into pieces of sixteen, eight, four, and two pieces of eight, which are called crowns of gold.

Thursday the 6th of June, the procession of Corpus Christi was celebrated with great magnificence; the streets and windows of the city were richly adorned with images, carpets and quilts, which, together with the green herbs and beautiful flowers, made a delightful show. In the silver-smith's streets was the conquest of Mexico curiously painted, with the houses exactly as they were then, and the habits the Indians then wore. The
procession

procession began with about an hundred images adorned with flowers; then followed the brotherhoods and religious of all orders, except the Jesuits and Carmelites; after them the canons, carrying the sacraments on a thing like a bier: the last were the archbishop, the viceroy, the ministry, magistrates of the city, and nobility. The feast of St. Peter and St. Paul being the 29th, it was kept in the cathedral, the high altar being so richly adorned that it was valued at one hundred fifty thousand pieces of eight, the chalice alone, which was set with emeralds, having cost eleven thousand.

On Tuesday the 16th of July died the lady Fausta Dominica Sarmiento, grandchild, in the fifth descent, to the emperor Montezuma, and daughter to count Montezuma the viceroy: she was then but eight years of age, and by her death a revenue of forty thousand pieces of eight a year fell to her youngest sister; for the counts of Montezuma in Spain, being descended from a son of the emperor Montezuma, who survived his father, and turning Christian, was baptized by the name of Peter: the king allows him forty thousand pieces of eight a year out of the exchequer at Mexico. The lady above-mentioned was buried the next day with great solemnity.

August the 10th, some Indians, to shew their skill, killed the least birds, upon the highest trees, with pellets shot out of trunks; and, on the 14th of September, when the price of bread had been set at half a real for fourteen ounces, a baker was fined for selling sixteen ounces for the same price: an action altogether unaccountable.

The time of his departure drawing near, Gemelli went to see some Indian antiquities not far from the city. These are two pyramids about twenty miles from Mexico: the first is the pyramid of the moon, two sides of which were about one hundred and

sixty yards, the other two about one hundred and ten yards; the height, as near as they could guess, was about fifty yards. To say the truth, it was nothing but a heap of earth made in steps like the pyramids of Egypt, only that those are of stone. There stood once on the top of it a very great idol of the moon, made of hard stone coarse enough, but the first bishop of Mexico caused it to be broke to pieces out of a religious zeal, and there are still three great pieces of it at the foot of the pyramid. A little south from this stands the pyramid of the sun, two hundred paces from the other; two sides of it were two hundred and twenty-five yards in length, but the other two were not above one hundred and fifty. Its height was about a fourth part more than that of the moon. The statue of the sun that stood on the top was maimed and displaced, but not thrown to the ground. This figure had a great hollow in the breast where the sun was placed, and all the rest was covered with gold.

It is dubious how the Indians, having no use of iron, could cut such hard stones and raise them upon such high structures, being destitute of convenient engines, and having neither mules, horses, nor oxen for carriage. The building of these pyramids is attributed to the Ulmecos, the second planters of New Spain, who some suppose came from the island Atlantis, mentioned by Plato in his *Timeus*, all the Indian histories agreeing that these Ulmecos came by sea from the east; and on the other side, the inhabitants of the island Atlantis derived their original from the Egyptians, who had the custom of raising pyramids.

New Spain cannot be paralleled by any country in the world for variety of beautiful birds, but of them all, the preference is given to the *sesontle*, which, in the Mexican language, signifies five hundred voices. It is a small matter less than a thrush, and of an
ashen

ashen colour, only the tail and wings are speckled with white. Besides, they have several sorts of parrots; and for eatable fowl there are two sorts of pheasants, and others like our hens, abundance of wild turkies, quails, and several other smaller birds. As for beasts, there are bears, wolves, wild bears, with their navel upon their back, hares, deer, foxes, tygers, lions, and other sorts. The lions are not so fierce as those in Africa, but being pursued by the dogs run up the trees. There are several other kinds peculiar to the country; as fiboles, as big as a cow, with a soft skin greatly valued; ardillas, like dormice; lobos, like leopards; and zorillas, as big as a cat: these, when pursued, stop to piss for their defence, because this water of theirs infects the very air for an hundred paces about, and overcomes those that pursue it.

The best fruits of New Spain are its gold and silver, the pearl taken in its seas, the emeralds found among the rocks, and other precious stones of Peru: but of the fruits growing on trees there are all sorts that Europe affords, except nuts, cherries, medlars and service-berries. These peculiar to the country are plantans, pine-apples, anonas, cocoas, ates and dates, besides the aguacates, like a walnut-tree; and sapotes, the taste of whose fruit is sweet, and the most valued of all that grow in a hot country. There is a composition made of it which the ladies chew to keep their teeth white. Among their shrubs the most respect is due to the cacao, which is the chief ingredient in chocolate, the other being the vainilla, which is the fruit of an Indian cane that twines about the orange-tree like ivy. Here grows a very useful plant, called annil or indigo, necessary in dying blue.

C H A P. XXIII.

The author leaves the continent of America, and sails from Vera Cruz to Havanna : his voyage from thence to Spain, on board one of the galeons of the plate fleet : he arrives at Cadiz : a description of that city : his journey from thence to Madrid, by the way of Seville, with a description of these two cities.

GEMELLI being weary of his long stay in Mexico, and having taken leave of all his friends, he set out from that city on Thursday the 10th of October, intending to embark on board the advice boat, bound for the Havanna, in order to sail from thence to the Canary Islands, there being no hopes that the fleet would sail in any reasonable time. After travelling four leagues he stopped at the inn of Chalco ; and next day, setting out before sun-rising with other company, they travelled five leagues. The third day of his journey he travelled eight leagues, and passed by the city Tlascula, against which the arms of the Mexican empire could never prevail. Next day, being satisfied there was nothing worth seeing at Tlascula, which is become an ordinary village, he went on his journey ; and at one in the afternoon, after riding five leagues, he arrived at the city of the Angels.

This city was founded by the Spaniards in 1531, and so called because the queen of Spain saw in a dream a great many angels marking out the ground. The buildings here, for the most part are of lime and stone, and vie with those of Mexico. The streets are neater and cleaner, and the great square is much finer. Three sides of it are adorned with good porticoes, on the other is the cathedral, with a most beautiful front and high tower. About the
city

city there are many mineral waters. On Monday the 14th Gemelli visited the monasteries of the Barefoot Carmelites, and of the Dominicans, of the Fathers Hospitallers, of the Trinity, and of St. Clare, which is vastly rich, having five hundred thousand pieces of eight, raised by the portions of the nuns, which lie dormant. There are besides several other monasteries, nunneries, colleges and churches, which may give the reader an idea of the greatness, magnificence, and wealth of the city. When Gemelli took his leave the bishop made him a present worth thirty pieces of eight.

On Monday the twenty-first, proceeding on his journey towards Vera Cruz, he rode three leagues, and lay at the Indian governor's house: next day, riding seven leagues, he set up at the farm of Istapa. Wednesday the 23d, having rode seven leagues thro' a very bad road, he lodged at a Spanish farm, where he was received courteously, but a fowl he gave them to dress came to table without legs or wings. Thursday the 24th, having travelled five leagues, he lay at the town of Cordova, the head of that alcaldeship. Friday the twenty-fourth, coming into a hotter country, he saw parrots of several sorts, and abundance of turkies: having travelled this day ten leagues, he lay at the inn of St. Compus, where there was neither man's nor horse's meat. Next day, having travelled four leagues over a wild plain, he found himself in some distress, having a great river to ford. But making a virtue of necessity, he and another Spaniard made one of the Mulattos guide them, and being come to the bank caused him to go over first upon a tall mule, and saw the water come up to the crupper. There being no going back he made the Mulatto come again to carry over his portmanteau, in which were his manuscripts and money, besides one thousand pieces of eight of the Spaniard's. Being come to the other

side they bethought themselves how little they should have been pitied had the Mulatto gone away with the mule and all they had, and left them in the lurch; for fear had so blinded their understandings that they forgot that one of them ought to have gone over first to the other side. After travelling four leagues farther thro' long grass, they lodged at a farm called Asperilla. Sunday the 27th, after riding five leagues, he arrived in the afternoon at the port of the New Vera Cruz, where he found his equipage sent thither a month before.

The new city of Vera Cruz is seated in the latitude of nineteen degrees and fifteen minutes, on a sandy barren soil, so that provisions coming a great way it is very dear living: the whole compass is scarce a Spanish league; and the air, especially in summer, is not wholesome. Very often, when the north wind blows, the houses are half buried in the sand about them, which has lodged all about the wall, so that one may ride over it. In 1683 it was taken and sacked by a pirate of Petiguavas, who landing early one morning half a league west of the city, surprized the inhabitants, who made no opposition. The castle is half a league from the city, so that it can no way defend it, but only serves to secure the port.

Gemelli rested here a month after his journey, being promised a good conveniency on board a vessel that was soon to set out. During his stay he frequently went a shooting, but in the woods was greatly plagued with guarapatus, a sort of vermin like crablice, which from the plants get upon people's clothes as they pass by and pierce into the very flesh; so that it requires much trouble and dexterity to get them out. The vessel being now ready the governor recommended him to the captain, and gave him letters of recommendation to captains of galleons at the Havanna, and likewise made him

him a present in money. Having taken leave of his friends, on Saturday the 14th of December he went aboard; the governor having added one favour to all the rest, which was not to suffer his trunks to be opened at the custom-house. About noon they fell down along the western channel, close to the castle, and got out about evening. Sunday the 15th they held on their course, and after a very stormy voyage of three hundred leagues they arrived safe at Havanna, and Gemelli landed and carried his goods to a hired house on Monday the 30th.

The Havanna is a little city in the island of Cuba, half a league in compass, situated in a plain, and in the latitude of twenty-three degrees twenty minutes. It is almost round inclosed with poor low walls on the land side. The inhabitants are about four thousand souls, Spaniards, Mulattos and Blacks, who live most of them in low houses. The women are beautiful and the men ingenious. The governor has the title of captain-general of the island, and administers justice with the assistance of an assessor. It is very dear living here, for three ounces of bread cost three pence, and half a pound of meat as much: a hen is worth six shillings and eight pence, and fruit and other things proportionable; so that a man can scarce live under two pieces of eight a day. The island is about three hundred leagues in length, and about thirty in breadth. The inhabitants are poor, having no trade but tobacco and sugar, the cultivating of which depends wholly upon the labour of Blacks, who are treated by their inhuman masters like brute beasts. The city of Havanna has a safe deep harbour, defended by three castles. In the town are four monasteries and five churches: there is likewise an hospital for soldiers, having a revenue of twelve thousand pieces of eight a year. Saturday the eleventh of January, 1699, a boat arrived in twenty-four hours from the opposite coast of

Florida, and set on shore some Indians of Cuyo. They were allowed to trade in hopes to convert them, because their cacique had consented to receive fourteen Franciscan missionaries into his country.

Monday the 13th, a small vessel from Jamaica brought the news of the peace concluded betwixt France and the allies. Thursday the 16th the chests of pieces of eight began to be put on board the galeons, in all amounting to thirty millions, belonging to the king and merchants, for goods sold at the fair of Porto Bello, a commerce carried on between the traders of Seville and Lima. These traders repose a great faith in one another, for, when once agreed about the price, they interchangeably deliver the bales of goods and chests of pieces of eight without seeing any thing of the contents; and afterwards, at the opening of them before public notaries, if any thing be found amiss, the companies of Seville and Lima are to make all good. This year the company of Lima paid five thousand pieces of eight for goods found over and above at the fairs of the foregoing year.

Sunday the 16th, the admiral made proclamation by sound of trumpet, that the fleet should sail on the 11th of the next month; and that all persons must be aboard on the 8th; prohibiting likewise, upon pain of death, any boat to go out of the harbour, lest the enemy should have notice that the galeons were ready to sail. Sunday the 22d, the master-builder of the ships represented to the admiral that the ships, being higher built than men of war, it would be sending them to be lost, if they went out under loaded. Hereupon there was a council held of all the sea-officers, who concluded the hold must be well stowed: a determination of judges more for their own than for the king's service. It being now near the time of sailing, the people belonging to the galeons bought up a great many red birds, called
cardinals,

cardinals, giving eight or ten pieces of eight for some of them; and upon computation it was said there had been eighteen thousand pieces of eight laid out upon these foolish birds. D. Ferdinand Chacon having generously given Gemelli his passage gratis on board his galeon, he sent, on Sunday the 9th, for his equipage, and on Wednesday the 12th, sent his boat to take him on board.

Thursday the 13th the warning piece being fired, all the galeons weighed anchor, and the admiral by sun-rising made way out of the harbour. Next day they were twenty leagues from Havanna, when a woman that was found on board in mens cloaths was taken and put among the other women, there being no possibility of putting her on shore. Continuing their voyage they arrived at Cadiz on Wednesday the 4th, of June, and came to an anchor near the Putales, having sailed one thousand three hundred leagues from Havanna in eighty-four days. All Cadiz rejoiced, forgetting the loss of several millions by the late sacking of Carthage: not only the houses but the steeples were adorned with colours set up, and all the shore covered with a multitude of people who came down to see them, the bells throughout all the city ringing to echo their joy. Before the anchors were dropt Gemelli went ashore in a boat, and took a room in an inn to recover himself after his past sufferings.

The island of Cadiz was first called Juno's Island, on account of a temple there dedicated to her: after that it had the name of Gadir and Gades, and lastly corruptly came to be called Cadiz. The city is seated to the northward of the Strait of Gibraltar, in thirty-six degrees thirty minutes latitude. The port may be said to be one of the most frequented in Europe. The city is an island: for on the east side, towards the continent of Spain, there is a small channel, over which is a most beautiful bridge:

tho' small it is vastly rich, and the buildings, as well public as private, not inferior to many in Europe, but the streets are ill shaped and crooked. The island, tho' but three miles in length, is well supplied with all sorts of provisions. On the east side is a small castle, and two forts upon the bay.

On Wednesday the 2d of July, Gemelli set out for Port St. Mary, two leagues from Cadiz. It is much larger than Cadiz, the streets handfomer, as are also the great houses: being situated upon an inlet of the sea that runs two leagues up the country, it is inhabited by very rich merchants. Having hired a calash for twelve reals, on Thursday he went in it, thro' a well cultivated country, three leagues, to St. Luca de Barameda, a town bigger than Cadiz, seated on the river Guadalquiver: here he took a boat before sun-set, and having run up six leagues with wind and tide, about midnight the waterman cast anchor, and they lay there all night. Making use of the tide they went up the river all Friday, and on Saturday the 5th he got into Seville, through the gate of the arsenal, where he gave the officers half a piece of eight to pass his goods. Andrea Castagnola, a Genoese, courteously received him in his house, and after dinner they went in a coach and four horses to take the air in the Alameda. Here are long rows of trees, and in the midst of them a fountain which serves to water the place every night. At the entrance into this place there are two high and ancient pillars, with two statues on them, much impaired with age, one of which they say represents Hercules, and the other Julius Cæsar.

Seville is seated in a plain, in the latitude of thirty-seven degrees twenty minutes. It is almost round, and not much less than two leagues in compass; so populous that it contains about forty-two monasteries of religious men, thirty-six nunneries and twelve hospitals, besides the parish churches;

and all these are good structures, as are the palaces and houses of the citizens; but the streets are not paved, but narrow, crooked and intricate, much like those of the Moorish towns. There are fourteen gates in its low walls, and on the other side of the river is another little city called Friana, joined to Seville by a wooden bridge. Seville is nothing inferior to Madrid for bigness or number of inhabitants; the men are handsomer than the women, but very proud.

Here is the palace of the antient Moorish kings, which is a large structure consisting of many courts, about which there are noble apartments; there are likewise several fine gardens adorned with myrtle walks, and fish ponds surrounded with orange trees; and the whole is inclosed with high walls and square towers at convenient distances. The lonja, or exchange, is a large structure, arched, and supported by pillars of hard stone: here a prior and two consuls administer justice to merchants under a canopy in a stately hall. Other things worthy of notice at Seville are an aqueduct said to be built by the Romans, the India-house, the house of St. Elmo, where boys are taken in to be instructed in the art of navigation, after which they are sent to the Indies: when they return the governor of the house receives them, and recovers their wages of the king or traders as long as they will continue to live in that house.

Sunday the 13th, having taken leave of all friends, Gemelli set out for Madrid in a coach hired for fifty-four pieces of eight. Going out of Seville, near sun-setting, they came to Castle Blanco by one in the morning, after having travelled five leagues, part mountain and part plain. Next day they travelled seven leagues, and before they got in some of them were like to be killed by the overturning of the coach. The three following days, hav-

ing travelled seventeen leagues, they came to Merida, a royal city, inhabited by about eight hundred families, among which there are some noted nobility. The most remarkable thing here is a noble stone bridge, half an Italian mile in length, over the river Guadiana, and broad enough for two coaches to go a-breast. Setting out from Merida next day, and continuing their rout for fifty-one leagues more, on Sunday the 27th they arrived at Madrid, over the bridge of Segovia.

The royal town of Madrid is seated in a plain, watered by the river Mancañares. The country about it is uneven, but the air is very good and wholesome; tho' it lies in no more than forty degrees forty minutes latitude, yet the cold in winter and the heat in summer are intolerable. The shape of it is almost oval, being little above a mile in length, and near five in compass. Before the kings of Spain chose it for their residence it was but a small village. The walls about it are low and of mud, with fifteen gates: the streets are always very dirty by reason of the custom of throwing all filth out at the windows. The houses, for the most part, cannot compare with those of Italy, being generally ill built with timber ribs; but the king's palaces are most magnificent, as well from the greatness of the structure as for the richness of the furniture, curious pictures, abundance of fountains, fish ponds and parks. All the churches are well served and adorned. Among the public buildings the Placa Major, or Great Square, is very graceful; all the houses about it are built after the same model, five stories high, with as many rows of iron balconies, all curiously made and uniform. Here the festival of riding at bulls is kept, when the square is all richly hung and graced with the appearance of the king, nobility, magistrates, and ladies of quality richly dressed. Gemelli being disappointed of going to Italy by the way of Alicant,

Alicant, as he had intended, he took two places for twenty-four pieces of eight in the coach for Pampe-lona, and having taken leave of his friends prepared for his journey.

C H A P. XXIV.

The author's journey from Madrid to Thoulouse, and from thence to Marseilles: his voyage from Mar-seilles to Genoa; a description of that city; his journey from thence to Milan, Bologna, Florence, Rome, and his arrival at Naples, which concludes the journey round the world.

MONDAY the 8th of September, having per-formed his devotions, he took coach after dinner and went three leagues; setting out again at break of day, he crossed the river Guadarrama, upon a good stone bridge, and came, at the end of three leagues, to the city of Alcala, where there is a famous university: passing forwards he lay at Junquera, having travelled nine leagues; and at a moderate rate of journeying they came to Pampe-lona on Thursday about noon. This city, seated in the latitude of forty-three degrees, is the me-tropolis of the kingdom of Navarre, and therefore the usual residence of the viceroy, and of all the courts. For spiritual affairs it has a bishop, with a revenue of twenty-two thousand pieces of eight. The city stands upon an uneven ground at the foot of the Pyrenean mountains; the compass of its walls is about half a league. The houses are ge-nerally well-built, but the monasteries and churches are not very stately. The citadel is very large, and the walls so thick, that two coaches may go a-breast upon them.

The

The inhabitants of Pampelona, and generally all the Navarrais, are affable, and lovers of strangers, shewing them much respect, and preferring them before their own people. Having got mules for eight pieces of eight each, to carry him to St. Jean de Pied de Port, he set out on Friday the 19th, and travelling over very steep mountains, next day he came to the village of Roncesvalles, an excessive cold place. The church belongs to the king, and has twelve canons.

In this church they shew two clubs covered with iron, used formerly in war, and one of the stirrups of Orlando, the great champion of France. Riding thence along a craggy dangerous path on the mountain, and going down on the other side, he crossed a small river, which divides the two kingdoms of France and Spain. A league from thence they came to St. Jean de Pied de Port, the metropolis of the Lower Navarre; it is well-walled, and has a small suburb, and on the hill that commands the city is a castle regularly fortified. On Monday the 22d, setting forwards, next day they arrived at Lascar, where the parliament of Bearn meets to avoid contests about precedence: Pau is the metropolis of this province, and is watered by the river Gave, over which there is a stone bridge of a vast length; the city is divided into upper and lower, and neither of them is walled. The castle is well-built, after the antient manner; there is Henry IVth's royal chapel, and the room where he was born. Thursday the 25th he rode five leagues, and lay at the town of Tarbe, the head of the province of Bigorne, but subject to a parliament of Toulouse; leaving Tarbe Friday the 26th, the third day after he arrived at Tholouse.

This city, famous for its parliament and university, is seated in an excellent air, and may be called the greatest city in France, next to Paris, being
half

half a league long, and the third part of a league in breadth. In the 638th year of Rome, Q. Cepio destroyed it, and carried thence a vast quantity of gold and silver. The walls at present are of brick, with towers after the antient manner. The houses are indifferently built of brick, and the streets well-paved; abundance of gentry live in it, and generally the inhabitants are well affected to strangers, behaving themselves civilly and politely. The bridge over the Garonne is two musket-shot in length, and broad enough for six coaches to go a-breast. The town-house is a stately structure, the walls adorned with half statues of marble, and the rooms with rich pictures of former magistrates. The famous canal that joins the ocean to the Mediterranean falls into the Garonne at this place; it was made by Louis XIV. to save sailing quite round Spain. Several gatherings of water made on the plain and hills supply the canal, banks thrown up keep in the water at certain distances where the ground is low, and the boats even mount over hills by the help of sluices, like so many steps.

Having hired a calash for nineteen crowns to Montpellier, Gemelli set out the last day of September betimes; after crossing the great canal several times upon bridges, he lay at Baziege; on Wednesday the 1st of October, after riding six leagues thro' a well-peopled country, he arrived at Carcasonne. This is a large walled city, of a considerable trade, especially in a kind of broad cloth called by its name. All the streets are good, but the market-place beyond them all. Next day, after riding six leagues he lay at Pouffol; and setting out early on Friday the 3d he dined at Beziers. This is a populous, plentiful, and rich city, seated on a hill within three leagues of the sea: moving forwards he lay at Perennes, the day after he reached the famous city of Montpellier, the capital of Lower Laugue-

Languedoc, which being seated on the top of a hill yields a fine prospect. The town-house is not so good as that of Thoulouse, and the cathedral is not greatly ornamented. The walking-place without the gate is one of the finest nature and art could produce, for the eye is delighted with a prospect of the sea, and pleasant fields of a long delicious plain.

After dinner he hired another calash to Marseilles for seven crowns, and having gone four leagues he lay at Pont Lunel. Monday the 6th, setting out early, and having passed the Rhone twice, once over a bridge of boats one hundred paces long, he came to Arles, a city of good trade and an archbishoprick. Tuesday the 7th, travelling along the famous aqueducts, at the end of eight leagues he came to Salons, remarkable for the tomb of Nostradamus the famous astrologer. Next day, after travelling nine leagues, he arrived at Marseilles. This city was built by the Phenicians, and was very famous in former times for its schools, which vied with those of Rhodes and Athens. At present it is one of the most celebrated ports in the Mediterranean, tho' so shallow that it must be often cleansed, to be able to admit small vessels. The compass of its walls is not above two Italian miles up and down; the houses are very good, but the streets are narrow, crooked, and dirty. Here is the Darfenne, where the galleys are built, large enough to build as many as they need, and a co-covered dock, in which two galleys may be built at once. The magazines for timber and naval stores are very large, and the armory will furnish arms for ten thousand men.

Gemelli would willingly have gone to see the St. Baume, or the cave where Mary Magdalen is said to have lived thirty years; but thinking every hour an age till he returned into his native country, he made the necessary provision in haste, and
on

on Sunday the 12th set out for Genoa on board a Tartan. Next day they were off Toulon, and in the morning, on Wednesday the 14th, were opposite to the town of Hieres. On Thursday the 15th, when day appeared, they were in sight of Antibes. Here the river Var divides Provence from the dominions of Savoy. At Villa Franca they anchored, where every vessel going to, or coming from the west, is to pay two in the hundred. After dining and paying the duties they went aboard again, and came two hours before sun-set to Monaco, a very strong place on a rock, the walls inaccessible on all sides, and with only one gate, up to which there is a very uneasy way; there are abundance of heavy cannon, besides small, all well mounted: the garrison consists of about nine hundred men, paid by the king of France. All next day they could get no farther than St. Remo in the Genoese territory. On Friday the 17th, they coasted a great way in sight of curious gardens, made fruitful by the industry of the Genoese, tho' the soil naturally be rocky and barren. They left Final behind, and then the city Noli, and at last came early to Savona, where they passed the night. Having hired a felucca, he set out from Savona on Saturday the 18th betimes, and at length came to Genoa before noon.

Genoa lies upon the Mediterranean, facing the south, and being seated on the side of a hill, looks from the sea a noble theater. All the buildings throughout its whole compass of four miles, are adorned with excellent marble, and a new wall being lately built of fifteen miles compass, within it new buildings are erecting, no less beautiful. The worst is that the streets are narrow and dark. The port is above a mile in length, with a light-house on the west end, and good fortifications. The city is called the Haughty, because the nobility, conceited of

their

their little dominion, are proud and intractable, tho' the territory does not extend to above one hundred and forty miles in length along the shore, and under twelve in breadth. The ladies are beautiful and witty, but their short way of speaking makes them ridiculous. The men are extremely frugal, and inclined to trade, which has gained them vast wealth. The doge's palace is one of the largest and most beautiful structures of Europe. The pharos or light-house is very remarkable; it is founded on a rock, defended by cannon, and raised four hundred and fifty feet high, in the top of which, at night, they set up thirty-two lights to direct the ships that sail by that coast.

Wednesday the 29th, his trunks being come by sea from Cadiz, he put them on board a Neapolitan felucca to be carried to Naples, being resolved to go himself by land, because of the ill weather which had lasted many days. Accordingly, on Thursday the 30th, he hired a calash for Milan, and set out on Saturday the 1st of November. After several times crossing the river Poisevera, he struck over barren mountains, and having rode twenty miles, came at night to Taylio. Next day he went on to Gavi. Monday the 3d, having passed thro' Novi, Tortona, and Voghera, he lay at the wretched inn of Purana. Wednesday the 4th, setting out betimes, and ferrying over the Po and the Tesin, he stopped and dined at Pavia, a strong city, enclosed with a broad wet ditch, and good outworks; it is populous, rich, and adorned with good palaces, and of greater antiquity than Milan. Its university is famous for having bred many learned men; and the town is memorable for having held out the siege laid to it by Francis I. king of France in 1525. Riding ten miles after dinner he came before night to Milan.

The

The city of Milan is thought to have been built by the Gauls three hundred and ninety-five years after the building of Rome. It is above eight miles in compass, containing about two hundred thousand inhabitants: this place is famous for four things, the multitude of its people, the magnificence of its cathedral, its impregnable castle, and its famous library called Ambrosiana, containing at least thirty thousand volumes. The castle has six bastions, with twelve pieces of cannon upon each of them, and six half-moons, and the rampart wholly surrounded with a wide and deep wet ditch. At the entrance there are two high towers, with brick walls about twenty-four feet high, and cased with hard stone diamond cut. On these and the walls of the curtains, there are very heavy pieces of cannon. This castle is generally looked upon as the best, the greatest, and safest of all the fortresses in Europe; and its armory, tho' at present not so full, is reputed sufficient to arm all Italy.

The great hospital, founded by the duke of Milan, may be said to be one of the best in Italy; it has a stately front outwards, and within is a great square court, with double rows of pillars, which support both the upper and lower arches, and both above and below are many galleries for the sick, besides apartments for those who serve the sick. Its revenue is said to be above one hundred and fifty thousand philippines. Half a mile from the city, without the Roman gate, they were making a burial place for those that died in the hospital, and the work is so great, that they had then laid out two hundred thousand philippines upon it. The Lazaretto, for people infected with the plague, is another great structure, with above three hundred rooms about it.

The cathedral being two hundred cubits long, and one hundred and thirty in breadth, is count-

ed the eighth wonder of the world, for its largeness, curious marble, excellent statues, and other such ornaments, tho' it is not yet quite finished, after so many years, notwithstanding the great number of artificers always employed, and the large revenue left for its fabrick. All the structure both within and without, up to the very roof, is adorned with excellent statues of half lengths, and other choice carving in marble.

Wednesday the 12th, a coach setting out for Bologna, Gemelli went in it, paying a pistole for his place. Next day, ferrying over the Po, they came to Piacenza, seated on a plain, and about five miles in compass. The houses and streets were good, but ill inhabited. Here is a palace of the duke of Parma, magnificent both for structure and furniture. Leaving Piacenza, two days after they arrived at Parma, seated on a plain upon the Via Flaminia, and of such an excellent air, that some of its citizens have lived to an hundred and twenty, and even to an hundred and thirty years of age. Its buildings are magnificent, the churches well adorned, and the streets wide. The compass of it is about four miles, and the river Parma runs thro' the middle of it, whence it takes its name. The college is one of the finest structures that can be seen, both within and without. There are rooms enough for two hundred and sixty collegians of good birth, and for the professors, officers, and servants.

They set out late from Parma, and at five miles end, passing over a bridge where every traveller pays ten pence, they entered the dukedom of Modena; and riding ten miles thro' well cultivated fields, they stopped at Regis, famous for its great fair, its good churches and streets, and fine palaces. Next day, having travelled fifteen miles, they came early to Modena, seated on the Via Æmilia,

milia: the country is marshy, being level, and watered by two rivers. The town is between three and four miles in compass, and there is nothing remarkable in its houses or narrow streets, unless it be abundance of dirt. In the middle of it is a very high tower, made of rough marble, an argument of the antiquity of the place. Thursday the 18th, setting out betimes, and riding three miles, they ferried over the river Panaro, and three miles more entered upon the territory of Bologna; and riding fourteen miles farther they came before night to Bologna. This is a city of great antiquity, famous for its university, beauty, bigness, wealth, delightfulness, and number of inhabitants, which amounts to eighty thousand. The buildings are of the best of Italy, all adorned with noble porticos.

Gemelli meeting here with the messenger of Florence, who was to set out the next day, resolved to go along with him: accordingly on Wednesday the 19th they set out early, and after riding sixteen miles among the Appenine mountains, whose steepness does not hinder the country people from sowing a great deal of corn upon them, they dined at Judano, and in the afternoon going forwards they entered the dominions of the great duke, after having shewn their certificate of health. Thursday the 20th, they set out two hours before day, the wind blowing hard and cold; and having passed over the high mountain Giogo, which seemed like Eolus' court, and riding eighteen miles farther, they came in the evening to the gates of Florence, where the trunks were narrowly searched.

Florence is so beautiful, pleasant, and well built, that, in the opinion of so great a prince as Charles V. it ought to be shewn only upon holidays, for it exceeds the noblest cities of Italy in spacious streets, magnificent palaces, stately churches, magnificence of public structures, squares, fountains, and excellent

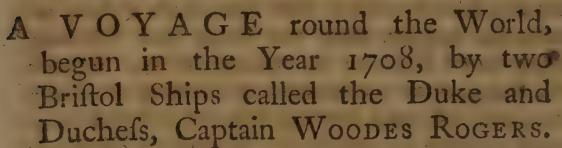
lent statues. It is seated in a plain encompassed with mountains, and is said to have been founded by Sylla's soldiers, six hundred and forty-five years after the building of Rome. The triumvirs made it a colony, and after the declining of the empire and rise of the Longobards, it became an imperial free city, and continued so till 1530, when it was forced to submit to the power of Charles V. Its compass at present is about five miles, well walled with a ditch, and a strong castle, and inhabited by near an hundred thousand souls.

Having hired a calash to Rome for twelve piaftres, he went along with the messenger, who set out on Sunday the 23d before noon; they travelled over hills and mountains naturally barren, but made fruitful by the industry of the Florentines. Next day they came early in the morning to Siena: this ancient city is seated on an ascent, the buildings few, but good; the third part of it being full of orchards and vineyards. They travelled eighteen miles after dinner, and lay at the castle of Turrineri. Tuesday the 25th, going out two hours before day, they did nothing but go up and down hills, with rain and fog; and the rain continuing after they had got into the plain, they lay at Aquapendente, the first city of the patrimony of the church. Next day, riding twenty-seven miles thro' rain and snow, they lay at Viterbo, which is three miles in compass. Thursday the 27th they went five miles up a frozen mountain; and after riding thirty-five miles, they lay at Baccareo: next day by noon they came to Rome, the queen of cities, and formerly head of the world.

Saturday the 29th Gemelli set out betimes, and travelling twenty miles lay at Velletin, seated on a mountain. Sunday the 30th, riding twenty-seven miles he lodged at Piperno, a town ill walled on the side of a hill. Next day, having travelled
twenty-

twenty-five miles, he lodged in the city of Fondi in the kingdom of Naples. Setting out early on Tuesday the 2d, and riding thirty miles, he lay at Agata di Sessa. Wednesday the 3d he set forwards four hours before day by torch light, and came to dine at the city Capua, near the river Volturnus. This city is more antient than Rome, and enclosed with a good wall, and defended by a strong castle. It was reduced to servitude by the the Romans for having entertained Hannibal, and came afterwards to be a colony, tho' it had vied with Carthage and Rome itself. Riding eight miles after dinner, thro' delicious plains, he came to Averfa, and four miles from thence he began to meet his friends who were come out to honour him. After mutual embraces they took coach, and proceeding four miles farther, entered the long wished for city of Naples; and thus he finished his journey round the world, having spent in it five years, five months, and twenty days.

A VOY.



The occasion of this expedition: the Duke and Duchess sail from Kingroad in the Bristol channel; they arrive at Cork; are endangered by an ignorant pilot; names of the officers of the two ships; the manner of the crew's behaving at Cork; the captain of the Hastings very civil; he quits company; a Swedish ship seized; a mutiny in consequence of parting with her; how quelled; the Duke's boatswain sent in irons to Madeira: a Spanish bark taken; delays about her ransom; ceremony of ducking under the tropic: they arrive at the Cape de Verd Islands; some account of them; a linguist deserts; regulations made in regard of plunder; a mate mutinies and is punished; they come to anchor at Grande; the Portuguese mistake them for French; success of the French pirates; a monster killed; two deserters frightened by monkies; a Portuguese canoe fired at by mistake; a procession at Angredekeys; that town described; the townspeople treated on shipboard.

I Do not recollect any trading city in England, that has been so forward to promote expeditions for the improvement of commerce, and discovery of unknown lands, as Bristol, where, by the wealth which has been amassed by many private people in business, we may see that fortune

ture is not always blind to desert, but sometimes smiles upon industry.

Among the many ships fitted out from that opulent city for adventure, few have made a more remarkable voyage than the *Duke* and *Duchefs*, which were sent out in concert, at the expence of a company of merchants, to cruise in the south seas, and officered with as experienced sailors as could possibly be collected. Woodes Rogers was appointed captain of the *Duke*, and commodore of the voyage. On board this ship sailed, in quality of pilot, captain William Dampier, who had been twice round the world before, and three times in the South Seas; Thomas Dover, a doctor of physic, a man of great skill and excellent sense, was second captain on board the *Duke*. The first captain on board the *Duchefs* was Stephen Courtenay, and the second captain Edward Cooke.

The crews of both ships were collected from various nations as well as trades, and amounted to three hundred and thirty-three men. The burthen of the *Duke* was three hundred and twenty tons, and she carried thirty guns; the *Duchefs* two hundred and sixty tons, and twenty-six guns.

August 1st, 1708, they weighed from Kingroad, and on the 5th about noon, came to anchor in sight of Kinsale; here, it being calm, a pilot came on board the *Duke*, who undertook to steer her into the cove, instead of which, on the morning of the 6th, it being yet dark, and the weather foggy, he would have carried her into a bay to the westward of Cork, whereby she might have been in some measure endangered, had not captain Rogers, who was happily better acquainted with the coast, chastised and prevented him, and brought her to anchor himself in the cove late in the afternoon.

During their stay in this harbour, they set the ship as much as possible to rights, stowed in a large quantity of provisions, and enlisted some good sailors, having cleared themselves of above forty lazy land-lubbers, some of whom they discharged, and others ran away.

On the 1st of September they weighed anchor from Cork, during their stay in which place, several of the sailors got themselves wives, and particularly a Dane, who was married to an Irishwoman, not a word of whose language he understood, yet he grieved very much at being parted from her, and was several days at sea before he rightly recovered his spirits.

His majesty's ship the Hastings kept them company till the 6th; captain Paul, who commanded her, had supplied them with several necessaries, the want of which had been overlooked, such as a speaking-trumpet, scrubbers, and iron scrapers for the ship's bottom, &c. nor would he accept of any retaliation as they were going so long a voyage, only desiring their owners might be made acquainted with his civilities, from whom a return would not be unpleasing, and accordingly they dispatched by him a letter addressed to alderman Batchelor and company, and the rest of the proprietors of the Duke and Duchefs.

The evening of the preceding day, a council of all the officers of both vessels was held on board the Duke, in which it was resolved to acquaint their respective crews of their intended course, in order that they might exchange with captain Paul any hands that were averse to a course so long and dangerous; and it is remarkable that only one man on board Roger's ship appeared discontented, and the reason of that was his having been chosen tithingman of his parish that year, his wife being, in consequence of his absence, liable to a fine of
fort y

forty pounds; however, he was soon reconciled, on considering he might be repaid by the profits of the voyage, in case it turned out to be successful.

On the 10th of September, about three in the afternoon, after a chase of nine hours, they came up with a Swedish ship which brought to, after being fired at twice; from some words dropped by two or three of her hands whom they found drunk, there was some room to suspect she had contraband goods on board; but finding, after a strict examination of the master and several of his men, that it would be very difficult to prove her a prize, and not thinking it worth while to delay, in order to carry her into port, they let her go without the least embezzlement. The master seemed very thankful at being detained so short a time, and at his departure presented to captain Rogers some dried beef and two hams, in return for which he received a dozen of red-streaked cyder. She was a ship belonging to Sadt, of twenty-two guns, and two hundred and seventy tons, had taken a sweep round Scotland and Ireland, and at her leaving the concert ships saluted them with four guns. While this ship was in custody, a design had been formed privately on board the Duke, headed by the boatswain and three other inferior officers, to make a prize of her; and when they found that she was given up, they were near rising in mutiny: however, their proceedings were stopped by putting ten of them in irons, displacing Gyles Cash, the boatswain, to whom succeeded Alexander Winter, and by giving a sound whipping to another of the principal fomenters. In a few days after these dispositions things began to run again in their proper channel.

Some inclination of the same nature appeared among the hands on board the Duchess, but it subsided when those of the Duke were quelled.

September the 14th, some of the ship's company, headed by a bold daring fellow, came to the steerage door and demanded Gyles Cash the discarded boatswain out of irons; captain Rogers gave them good words, and having decoyed the ringleader of them to a private conference him with on the quarter deck, he had him suddenly seized, and lashed by one of his own followers; after which piece of justice he sent Gyles Cash in irons on board the crown galley of Biddiford, which had kept them company since the 6th instant, and left them on the 15th, standing in for the Madeiras, an island that the concerts agreed to pass, chusing rather to cruize among the Canaries, for liquor, of which they stood in some want.

On the 17th, they thought they discovered a sail, but upon a nearer view found it to be a rock lying a league to the south-west of Salvege's Island. In the afternoon they gained sight of the Pike of Teneriff, and the following day took a Spanish bark of twenty-five tons, bound from Oratava to the island of Forteventura, with forty-five passengers, among whom was the guardian of the aforesaid island, an honest merry friar, who took his glass chearfully, and made no scruple of drinking a health to king Charles III.

On the 19th, standing in for Oratava, they sent the master of the Spanish bark ashore, with two or three other prisoners, to agree about her ransom; he was accompanied by Mr. Carleton Vanburgh, agent for the owners on board the Duke, who went against the will and judgment of captain Rogers upon this errand; in consequence of which obstinance, a flag of truce came off the island in the morning of the 20th, with a letter directed to the captains Rogers and Courtenay, and signed by J. Poulton vice-consul, Bernard Walsh, J. Crosse, and G. Fitzgerald, signifying that Mr. Vanburgh

brugh should be detained ashore till the bark was restored, to keep which was not only against a private contract entered into between Spain and England relative to the Canaries; but would be of the greatest detriment, as well to the trading subjects of both crowns, as to several English merchants residing on these islands, of whom would be exacted a tenfold satisfaction.

To this epistle the captains agreed to answer, that, in keeping the bark, they acted up to their instructions; that they knew nothing of any private article in favour of the ships of these islands; and that, if measures were not taken to ransom her, and restore Mr. Vanbrugh, they would bring their guns to bear upon the town the ensuing day, and afterwards carry the Spanish prisoners (for the maintenance of whom, as well as themselves, they were sufficiently victualled) to the English settlements whither they were bound; for they judiciously concealed their intentions of cruising in the South Seas.

September the 22d, Mr. Crosse, one of the English merchants who had signed the abovementioned letter, came off to them in a boat, bringing with him Mr. Vanbrugh, together with some wine, hogs, grapes, and other necessaries, to ransom the bark; at the desire of that gentleman, whatever could be recovered of the effects belonging to any of the prisoners were returned to them, particularly the crosses, reliques, and books of the friars; and to the merry guardian of Forteventura, captain Rogers made a present of a cheese. On the 24th, a committee was held on board the Duke, wherein Mr. Vanbrugh's complaints against captain Rogers for something, which he supposed wrong in this treaty, were judged to be groundless; and the captain unanimously acquitted.

September the 25th they passed the tropic, and about sixty of the crew, who had never been this course before, were ducked three times, by hoisting them half way up the main-yard, with a rope to which they were well fastened, and fousing them into the water; this immersion was of special service to some of them, cleansing them from the filth and dirt which they had necessarily contracted in so long a voyage. Such as chose to pay half a crown a piece, to be spent among the ship's crew in a merry-making, on their return to England, were excused from this purifying ceremony. On the 29th, a sailor fell from the main top-gallant into the sea, and was drowned; it was supposed he had been suddenly seized with a fit. The same morning they came in sight of the Cape de Verd Islands, and on the 30th anchored in the bay of St. Vincent.

October the 1st, they sent ashore their empty casks, to be cleansed and filled with water, of which, as well as wood, there is in this place great plenty. On the 3d, it was agreed to dispatch Joseph Alexander their linguist, with a very respectful letter, to the governor of these islands, praying leave to traffic, as being subjects of Great Britain, and allies to the crown of Portugal. During their stay in this place their linguist deserted, but for what reasons were never known. The deputy governor, who was a negro, came on board the Duke, bringing with him limes, oranges, tobacco, potatoes, bonanoes, musk-melons, water-melons, fowls, hogs, and brandy, for which he was paid in prize-goods of little value, and was very well satisfied. Here were also made, in a committee held on board the Duchefs, certain regulations relative to prizes and plunder; and measures were taken to prevent the sailors from selling their cloaths to the negros and natives of these islands,
for

for brandy and other trifles, which, tho' not overstocked, they were vastly prone to do. These poor people in general prefer any thing to cover them, and a few necessaries, to money.

Of these islands we need not say much, they being already sufficiently known; they are ten in number, but only six of them, viz. St. Jago, St. Nicolas, Bonavist, St. Antonio, Bravamayo, and Fuego, so called from its volcano, are inhabited. St. Jago and St. Nicolas are the most populous, the former is the seat of the governor, and besides the capital, which is a bishop's see, and bears the same name with the island, here is a large town, said to contain five hundred houses and upwards; it is called Ribera Grande, and has a good harbour. The soil is but indifferent; some corn and grapes thrive in the vallies, and the principal commodities are indigo, sugar, tobacco, and goat-skin, from which is made the fine maroquin leather. Their goats are fat and well-tasted; they yearn once in four months, bringing forth three or four kids each time.

Many ships take in yearly a lading of salt in the island of Mayo, where it is produced naturally by the sun operating on the sea-water.

The island of St. Vincent is a better road for shipping than St. Jago; it abounds with Guinea hens, curlews, and various sorts of sea-fowls. The only game that some of the Duke's people, who went ashore for that purpose, could start, was a wild ass, which, tho' wounded, escaped, after having led them a most fatiguing chase. This island was formerly inhabited, and had a governor of its own, but it has been deserted for some years, except by a few negroes, who live by catching tortoises and wild goats. The land is mountainous and barren, nor can much be said in praise of its air; great part of it is over-run with wood, which is fit for

little else but burning, and between the trees there are cobwebs, spun by a very large sort of spider, so thick and strong that it is not without difficulty they are broken thro'. The heat of the climate made a considerable impression on several of the sailors who had never faced it before; however, bleeding relieved them.

On the 8th of October, the deputy-governor was set ashore, near a rocky cavern, where he observed he was to rest for that night, there being no houses any where near him; and then the ships set sail. On the 22d Mr. Page, second mate of the *Duchess*, being ordered to a birth on board the *Duke*, refused to change his ship, and struck captain Cooke for insisting that he should: however he was mastered and put into the boat; captain Rogers condemned him to the bilboes, but before the sentence could be put in execution, he leaped overboard, with an intention to regain the *Duchess*, where he perhaps might have done some mischief, by exciting the men to mutiny, all her officers being on board the *Duke*; however the boat which was along side soon followed and overtook him, and having once again brought him before his superior officers, he was forthwith tied up to the main-geers, there heartily lashed, and then confined in irons in the *Duke's* hold, where he lay till the 29th, on which day he was set at liberty, having promised to behave better for the future.

November the 2d, two persons were ordered into the bilboes, it being discovered that they had concealed two shirts, a peruke, and a pair of stockings, part of the plunder of the Canary prize, but they were discharged on begging pardon. The 14th they had sight of the land of Brazil, and on the 18th came to anchor in the middle of the entrance of the island of Grande, in eleven fathom water, there being but little wind. On the 20th,

two boats, in one of which was a lieutenant, in the other Mr. Dampier, were dispatched to the watering-place, to see that it was clear of enemies. Here they found a Portuguese boat, that complained they had been lately robbed by the French. It rained all day so hard that the men could not work; and about four in the afternoon captain Courtney put several hands, whom he had remarked as being generally most forward in mutiny, into irons for disobeying command. In the evening it cleared up, and a pinnace with captain Cooke and lieutenant Pope was dispatched to Angre de Reys, called by the Portuguese *Nossa Senhora de la Concepcione*, a village about three leagues distant, with a present of butter and cheese to the governor, and a request of his friendship. As they came near the shore, the inhabitants mistaking them for French, fired on them several times, but did them no damage, entreating their pardon when they discovered their mistake; and a friar, who entertained them very civilly, for the governor was gone to Rio de Janeiro, a city twelve leagues farther off, told them they had very lately been plundered and abused by the French.

On the 22d of October, several of the inhabitants came off from the town in canoes, bringing with them limes, fowl, corn, &c. which they exchanged for trifling necessaries: to these captain Rogers and Courtenay behaved with much civility, promising a handsome gratuity to such of them as should secure any of their men who might desert. There are several gold mines up the country, to work wherein a Portuguese vessel that came to anchor here on the 23d, brought a cargoe of negros; our pinnace was fitted out and armed to enquire whence she came; to which question her captain gave a very satisfactory answer, and sent a pot of sweetmeats, and some very fine sugar, as a

present to the English commanders. The Portuguese are very careful in concealing their gold, and the roads leading to their mines, from all other nations, some of them affirming it to be a journey that would take up a month, others but fifteen or twenty days from Sanetas, the sea-port town, to these vast sources of wealth. Some French buccaneers, that not long before this time had put in here to water, in less than a month seized above twelve hundred pounds weight of gold in boats, for the land road leading from the mines to Rio-Janero is very bad, and almost impassable.

The 24th of this month, as the ships were cleaning, Messrs. Dover and Vanbrugh went pleasuring in the pinnace, and returned with a creature that stunk intolerably; the skin of it was all fur, stuck full of quills or sharp prickles like a hedge-hog, and its head was like a monkey's. The Portuguese, among whom were three or four Franciscan friars, who came very civilly to the side of the ships, affirmed it to be delicious food, the bad smell arising only from the skin; however, none of the sailors were sufficiently sharpset to try it.

The 25th, two men deserted from the Duchess, but were so terrified by the noise made by the monkeys and baboons in the woods, which they mistook for the howling of tygers, that in the night they ran as far as they could into the water, hailing the ship, and praying to be taken on board again. Two Irishmen, by name Michael Jones and James Brown got off from the Duke, the same day into the woods, but were surprized upon the strand, where they waited for a Portuguese canoe to carry them elsewhere, in two days after, and being brought before captain Rogers, that gentleman gave them a sharp reprimand, had them severely whipped, and afterwards laid in irons.

The day before these fellows were re-taken, the pinnace and yawl were dispatched after a canoe, in which the captain suspected they lurked, as it scudded away very hard to escape; the former fired at her, and wounded one of the Indians that rowed her, who died in about two hours after; he that steered was a friar, who, ran the canoe ashore, and escaped into the woods; but he was brought back by another Portuguese, who told him they were English. The boats crew were brought on board the Duke, and civilly entertained by captain Rogers: however, the friar was not to be consoled for the loss of his slave, and some gold which he had got by visiting the mines, and either lost in this bustle, or buried in the place on which he had ran the canoe: however, he threatened to seek redress in Portugal or else in England.

The 27th, captain Rogers, captain Courtenay, and some other officers, went in their boat to Angre de Reys, to see a procession held in honour of the conception of the Virgin Mary. The Portuguese governor treated them with great politeness, and desired that their music, which consisted of two trumpets and a hautboy, might be permitted to assist at divine service instead of an organ, which request was granted. When church was over, the musicians, who were by this time made half drunk, marched at the head of the procession, wherein were born lamps of incense; a host; and an image of the holy Virgin, adorned with flowers and wax candles, supported on a bier by four men; to which pageant succeeded the guardian of the convent, followed by about forty priests and friars, the governor of the town, captain Rogers, captain Courtenay, and the other officers of the ships, each of whom, out of complaisance, carried a wax taper; the rear was closed by some junior

priests, and the principal inhabitants, every one with his consecrated candle. When the ceremony was over, there was a handsome entertainment provided for the English gentlemen at the convent, and another by the governor, at the guard-house, where there were then quartered twenty men, with a lieutenant and an ensign ; for the governor's residence was three miles farther off.

The town of Angre de Reys consists of about sixty low houses, covered with palmetto leaves, poorly built, and worse furnished ; perhaps they had secreted their best moveables, as they had been so lately ravaged by the French. Here are two churches, and a monastery of Franciscans, neat, decent, and plainly furnished. The fathers had some black cattle, of none of which they chose to dispose.

The Duke now fell down to the entrance of Grande by the side of the Duchefs, and then the boat went back to the town for liquor, and an invitation to the principal gentlemen to come on board, which they did, and were extremely merry ; in their cups they toasted the Pope's health ; and captain Rogers, to be even with them, drank to the archbishop of Canterbury, and William Penn, the head of the people called quakers, all which toasts they pledged with great good humour and good nature. At parting, the captain made the fathers of the convent a present of some butter and cheese ; and as the weather was hazy, the whole company lay on board all night, but in the morning were sent ashore in the boat, quite enraptured with the agreeable treatment they had met with, and promising to take great care of some letters given them in charge.

C H A P. II.

Mr. Vanbrugh turned over to the Duchefs; the ships quit the island of Grande; a description of that island; also of the river of Amazons; the first discovery of that river by Francis Orellana; his various adventures in this expedition; his death.

NOVEMBER the 30th, a committee was held on board the Duchefs, wherein Mr. Vanbrugh's conduct, in firing at the Portuguese canoe, was examined and condemned; and it was afterwards unanimously agreed, that, to prevent ill blood, that gentleman should be turned over to the Duchefs, and that the company's agent in that ship, Mr. William Bath, should take his place in the Duke; which being done, both ships got under weigh, with little or no wind, but came to anchor again in about two hours: however, they took the advantage of a gale springing up at east and be-north December the 3d, and soon distanced the island of Grande, steering for Juan Fernandez.

The island of Grande is a remarkable high land, on which there is a good deal of wood, inhabited by monkees and other wild beasts, with oranges, lemons, and guavas growing wild; here are also plantains, bonanoes, pine-apples, Indian-corn, and bread-fruits; fowls and hogs are scarce, but sheep and oxen indifferently plenty. The wind veered but little between north and east during the stay here of the ships, and the weather was excessively hot.

There being a very full account of Brazil, to which the island of Grande properly belongs, in the memoirs * of Mr. Nieuhoff, it were needless here to repeat it; however, as the river of Ama-

zons

* Vide vol. iv. of this Collection, from page 81 to 90, and from 169 to 189.

zons is the northern boundary of that country, and of prodigious consequence to trade, a few words relative to its situation and course, as well as to the different nations inhabiting its banks, will not, it is hoped, be thought superfluous, or an impertinent introduction.

The river of Amazons is certainly one of the greatest in the world; it derived its name from a fierce and warlike sort of women, not unlike the famous female warriors of old, formerly supposed to have inhabited its banks; but who, from the most accurate accounts, appear to have existed only in fancy, and the story of them was perhaps an invention of the natives, calculated to deter the Spaniards from penetrating farther into the country: it takes its rise at the foot of the Cordilleras, or chain of mountains eight or ten leagues east of Quito in Peru, and after a meandering course of eighteen hundred leagues, empties itself into the Atlantic ocean by eighty-four different mouths.

After the excursion made by Gonzalo, the brother of Francis Pizarro, over the stupendous mountains that bound the province of Los Quixos to the northward; he found the cold so intolerable, that he was obliged to leave his cattle, together with the best part of his baggage and provision, behind him, and to strike into the valley of Zumaque, from whence he pursued his way to the province of Coca, the cacique of which was very kind to him, furnishing him with as much provision as he could possibly amass, and assuring him, at the same time, that if he either embarked on the river, which watered these plains, or coasted along it, it would in a short space bring him into one of the most plentiful, as well as one of the richest countries the sun ever shone upon, the inhabitants of it being covered with plates of gold.

This

This information was sufficient to stimulate Gonzalo in his progress, his sole view being, if possible, to make himself as considerable as his brother, by new discoveries and conquests. Having made the cacique a present of a fine sword, in return for his civility, he put himself at the head of his cavalry, and began his march by the side of the river Coca, the country every where round him appearing like a second paradise: but, alas! this was but a transitory scene: the face of things began soon to change; the verdure and woodlands degenerated into sands and deserts, and the roads to grow craggy and uneven, crossed often by rivulets, over which they were obliged to swim, whereby his people were considerably harassed, having no canoes, nor being able to find either fords, inhabitants, or, what was still worse, provisions for more than forty-three days. At the end of this space of time, they arrived at a part of the river where it was but twenty feet wide, the stream being pressed by a rock on each side, thro' which it precipitated into a valley from a height of two hundred fathoms. Over this water-fall Gonzalo contrived to throw a bridge, the admirable structure whereof has met with prodigious encomiums from many Spanish historians; and on it he passed his troops to the opposite shore; but the prospect did not at all mend from the change; the country wore the same desert face, without admitting even a hope of an improvement, while the wants of his company daily increased, and provisions grew more and more scarce.

This chain of disappointments induced him to set his people to work upon building a brigantine, for the easier carriage of his sick men down the stream, and with them he also embarked all his baggage, provisions, and gold, with fifty soldiers by way of guard, all under the command of Francis

cis Orellana, a man of a good family in Truxillo, in Old Spain, whom he strictly charged never to lose sight of the main body of adventurers, but to make the same shore every night, and repair to the camp. He obeyed his general's orders for some time very exactly, till, upon circumstances growing worse and worse, he was commanded to sail down the river in search of provisions and inhabitants; agreeable to which injunctions he launched into the middle of the stream, and was, by its rapidity, in three days, carried more than three hundred leagues, without using either sails or oars. He arrived at length in another river, much larger, but not so swift, the course of which he followed for more than a day; at the end of which space, finding it widen still more, he determined within himself to trace it to the sea, never once remembering either duty, gratitude, or the distressed situation of his general, nor yet paying any regard to the remonstrances made him on that head by several of his people, to whom he represented the impossibility of sailing up the space which, in a few days they had come down, in less than many months, as well as the probability of the general's coming up with them on the banks of this new river, which, said he, his excellency could not possibly miss: however, he was strongly opposed in his design of proceeding, by Gaspar de Carvajal a friar, and Ferdinand Sanches de Vargas, who formed a division in this little vessel, and would have succeeded in their design of returning to Gonzalo with the provisions they had gathered, had not Orellana broke the party by setting Ferdinand ashore in a most dreary wilderness, bounded on one side by very high hills, on the other by a broad river, leaving him neither arms nor provisions, and it is very probable he expired for want: he had more prudence than to treat the friar in this manner, on account

count of his habit ; but he intimated to him, that presuming to fathom the intentions of his commander would be attended with a severe chastisement.

Having in this manner smothered the intended revolt of his people, he began to explain to them his intentions, by telling them, fortune had, as it were, led them on to one of the greatest and most desirable discoveries ever made in the Indies, viz. the great river whereon they now sailed, which rising in Peru, and running from west to east, formed undoubtedly a passage from the southern to the northern sea, by the finest channel in the world, opening to them an opportunity of reaping a harvest of wealth, which the adjacent countries would certainly afford, and which to think of sharing with any others, would be injustice done to them all, by giving away those favours wherewith heaven seemed to indulge them particularly. These were arguments that not only quieted all the murmurs of his people, but also inflamed each individual of them with a share of that ambition and avarice which warmed his own breast.

His necessities soon after forcing him ashore, for seven of his men died thro' want, they having been obliged to feed upon the leather they had on board, a desperate skirmish ensued between him and the natives, who fought with long shields, bows and arrows, in which however he got so much the better, that he brought off a considerable quantity of provisions, but was pursued till he passed the frontiers of this country, which is called Machiparo, by eight thousand Indians in an hundred and thirty canoes : eighteen of his men were wounded in this fray, but they soon recovered.

Having rested three days in a town, at a good distance from this country, which the inhabitants had abandoned, he again launched into the middle of the stream, and the following day went ashore

at a village where he found some curious earthen ware finely painted, several monstrously shaped idols, and some few provisions, which he carried off by force: here also they saw some gold and silver, and was told by one or two of the natives, who chanced to fall into his hands, that the country abounded with both these sorts of metal. From hence he sailed on an hundred leagues farther, till he reached the land of Pagnana, where he was very civilly treated, and readily furnished with whatever necessities he stood in need of.

Some days after he came to the mouth of a river, the stream whereof was as black as ink, and so rapid, that for upwards of twenty leagues it did not commix with that of the Amazons. In his passage he landed at many towns, one of them particularly was surrounded with a wall of timber, and afforded him plenty of fine fish; in another he found only women, among whom he had some notion of taking up his quarters at least for a while, when their husbands, who had been out upon some expedition, returned with the evening, and attacking Orellana, forced him to take refuge on board his brigantine, in which he continued his voyage, and saw, as he passed, many great towns, with paved roads, planted with fruit-trees; and attempting to land, he was opposed by the natives, but their leader being killed, the followers dispersed, leaving Orellana at liberty to carry off whatever provisions he could find.

He now received frequent informations of white people inhabiting hereabouts, whom, by the description given of them, he believed to be Spaniards. When he had sailed, according to the best computation he could make, near fourteen hundred leagues, without having any prospect of the sea, he was attacked one night that he encamped ashore by a large body of the natives, headed by twelve white women,

women, of an athletic size, who fought with great resolution, till seven of them fell, and then the rest fled with their followers.

It is very probable these women were no more than the wives of the generals of these people, since it is common in the Indies for the women to accompany their lords to the field, as well as to engage in battle by their sides upon an emergency. This little incident, however, worked so strongly on the romantic brain of our Spaniard, that he conjured up a state of female warriors, inhabiting the banks of this river, of whom he gave a very formal account; but as this nation has been invisible to all other travellers, there is no probability of its having existed any where, but in the fruitful fancy of Orellana; and this river, which would otherwise have been distinguished to his immortal honour by his name, was from henceforward called the River of Amazons.

In a country wherein he arrived on St. John's day, which he therefore particularized by the name of that saint, he had a skirmish with the natives, whereby he lost several of his men, and his chaplain had one of his eyes thrust out with a spear. Soon after this engagement, some islanders attacked him in canoes, having drums, trumpets, and other musical instruments to inspire them; but tho' their number was seven or eight thousand, he kept them off with his fire-arms. From the next province which he reached, lying on the left side of the river, and having many large towns, the people came off in canoes to gaze upon him, and then they discharged some poisoned arrows, whereby he lost one of his men; and to cover himself from these missile weapons of death, he was forced to barricado his boats. He now discerned the tide; and as he came to the mouth of the river, having lost

more of his men by poisoned arrows in his progress, he found the people more civilized, and ready to furnish him with provisions.

In August, 1541, he found a clear passage to the sea, and having coasted round the north cape, he stood over to the island of Trinidad, where having purchased a ship, he set sail for Spain, and made such a report of the value and wealth of his discoveries, that the emperor Charles V. gave him a most ample patent to settle colonies thereupon, &c. In consequence whereof, anno 1549, he returned to the River of Amazons; but this expedition was from the beginning unfortunate; a contagious distemper first swept away numbers of his men, whereby he was obliged to forsake two ships out of three, wherewith he set out, and his company was at last reduced to a little bark, which being cast away upon the coast of Caracca, he soon after died himself out of meer despair, tho' he survived most of his followers; in some few Spanish authors the River of Amazons is now called Orellana.

C H A P. III.

Lewis de Melo sails to the river of Amazons to make discoveries, but miscarries; Pedro de Orsua goes upon the same expedition; is privately murdered; one of his assassins assumes the title of king, and is killed by Lopez the tyrant, who sets up in his place: he murders his daughter; is taken, tried, condemned, and executed; some private adventurers from Cusio, and two jesuits make separate excursions along the banks of the river of Amazons, but have no success: the expedition of captain John de Palacios; his death; count Chincon assists his followers, as does the government of Brazil: of the products of the countries lying on the banks of this river; the customs and manners of the people; the progress made by the jesuits herein; their mission; the temperature of the climate, and the course of the river described.

THE ill success of Orellana did not prevent others from following his steps. John III. of Portugal, to which kingdom by treaty belonged all such land as lay between the river de la Plata, and the mouth of the Orellana, sent thither Lewis de Melo with ten ships, eight of which he lost at the mouth of the river, and with the two others went to the island of St. Margaret to refit, where he was deserted by most of his men, and all his designs fell consequently to the ground.

Some gentlemen of New Grenada afterwards tried their luck here without any success. But these disappointments had no effect upon Pedro de Orsua, a Navarese, whose birth and education were both

both good, his courage unquestioned, and of his prudence he had given many proofs. This gentleman weighed his undertaking well before he put it in execution; and when he published it, so universally was he beloved, and so great was his reputation, that people of all ranks subscribed liberally towards the support of it, and soldiers of tried valour repaired from every quarter to enlist under his banners.

He departed from Cusco anno 1560, with seven hundred soldiers, and a good number of horses, attended by the prayers and acclamations of all the inhabitants. Never did any expedition, set on foot in these countries bid fairer for success; his plans were laid so judiciously, that had he not been ruined by treachery, he and his followers had reaped immortal honour, as well as acquired immense riches.

In his train was a young Spaniard named Ferdinand de Guzman, and one Lopez D'Aquira, an ill-looking Biscayner, whom he made his ensign: these two wretches falling in love with his lady, who was a noble example of conjugal fidelity, and followed her husband every where, engaged some part of his army to revolt; in the confusion poor Orsua fell by the hand of an assassin. Whether or no the gratification of their lust was the consequence of this murder, history does not say; but it informs us that Ferdinand de Guzman immediately assumed the title of king, which mock dignity he enjoyed a very short time; for he was privately killed by those very persons who had raised him, and Lopez D'Aquira succeeded him, who straightway gave his followers to understand, that his intention was to possess himself of Guiana, Peru, and of New Grenada, the riches of which countries should be divided, he said, among them.

Never

Never was fway more bloody nor tyrannical than that exercifed by Lopez; wherefore he is even at this day remembred by the Spaniards under the name of the Tyrant. Being himfelf meanly born, he had a fort of innate antipathy to gentry, and murdered almoft all who could pretend to that rank in his army, keeping continually about him a band of ruffians, by way of body-guards, and becoming fo jealous of his new dignity, as well as fearful of his life, that if any of his people only talked together privately, he fufpected them of plotting againft him, and had them immediately taken off by treachery: nor did even the women efcape his cruelty; for feveral of them, whom the fatigue of travelling weakened and difordered, he abandoned to the favage mercy of the natives, helpless and unprovided of every neceffary.

He embarked in Orfua's veffel, upon the river Coca, which foon brought him into the River Amazon, the current whereof, he not being able to mafter it, carried him forceably into the great channel leading to the North Cape, from whence he failed to the ifland of Margaretta, the place where he landed being ftill called the Tyrant's Port. Here the governor miftaking him for one of the king's fervants, treated him with great refpect and hofpitality. The return which he made thereto, was to murder not only his excellency himfelf, but alfo his father and all his friends; and then, with the affiftance of John Burg, another villain, ravaged the whole ifland, committing the moft horrid barbarities, as well in the ifland of Cumana as here; from whence paffing over to the coaft of Carracca, he laid it wafte, together with all the provinces lying upon the river Venezaello and Baccho. He then entered Martha, where he put all to the fword; and having defigns next upon Quito, he continued
his

his march thro' the kingdom of New Grenada, where he was forced to a pitched battle, his whole army entirely defeated, and he himself caught, as it were, in a toil, finding no possibility of escaping, every pass being shut up, addressed himself thus to a darling daughter, who had attended him in all his adventures.

“ Daughter, no father’s affection ever transcend-
 “ ed mine for you ; whom to place upon a throne
 “ was my principal view, and the chiefest of my
 “ wishes : since fortune has cruelly traversed my
 “ designs, it were injustice to let thee live the
 “ shameful slave of exulting enemies, who will
 “ brand thee with being the daughter of a traitor,
 “ and of a tyrant. To save thee, child, from this
 “ ignominy, is mercy ; from it there is no safety
 “ but in death ; if thou hast not sufficient courage
 “ with thy own hand to administer the remedy,
 “ thy father’s arm shall do the friendly office.” The
 poor girl, thunder-struck with this speech, entreat-
 ed a few moments might be allowed her to pray
 to heaven ; which petition he granted ; but ima-
 gining her conference with God too long, he shot
 her, she being still upon her knees, with a cara-
 bine, and then stabbed her to the heart with his
 dagger. Soon after this filicide he was taken pri-
 soner, and carried to the island of Trinidad, where
 he had a good estate, and after a short trial con-
 demned to be quartered, and the houses which
 belonged to him were razed to the ground and
 strewed with salt, that no remains of what had ap-
 pertained to such an earthly fiend should be traced
 in futurity.

The next attempt for discovery upon the river
 of Amazons was set on foot by the people of Cus-
 co in 1566, but it was disconcerted by the leaders
 quarrelling among one another, whereby they be-

came

came a prey to, and were cut in pieces by, the natives, only two priests, and one of the captains named Maldonado coming off alive.

By command of the king of Spain two generals were sent up this river next, but the many cross accidents which they met with, rendered all their schemes abortive.

About the year 1606, says Ovalle, two jesuits set out from Quito, upon a mission in these provinces, one of whom was massacred by the natives, the other very narrowly escaped with his life.

In 1635, captain John de Palacios went from Quito to this river, with a few armed men and some Franciscan friars; but he was murdered at Annete in 1636, with all his followers, two friars and six soldiers excepted. These last got a small vessel that carried them to Para the capital of Brazil; the governor of which place, relying on their report of the situation of affairs, furnished them with four canoes, seventy Spaniards, and twelve hundred Indians, to pursue the expedition, wherein, the year following, they were considerably assisted by the count de Chinchon viceroy of Peru, by whose appointment father D'Acunha, rector of the college of Cuença, and another jesuit, set out for Para, where having collected the best information possible, touching this last expedition, he embarked for Spain, where, anno 1640, he published his account of this river.

Here we find, that on its banks grows a tree called andirova, which is an excellent cure for wounds; also plenty of red-wood, cedar of prodigious thickness, brazil, log-wood, iron-wood, so called from its hardness, all kinds of timber-trees, and trees of the bark of which may be made cordage and sails; here were also found cotton-trees. The inhabitants make hatchets with tortoise-shell edges, or with hard stones ground fine, with prodigious

digious labour. They have also chizzels, and other instruments for carpenters work, made of the teeth and horns of wild beasts. The chiefs and directors of their religious worship are sorcerers, by whom they are taught that revenge is meritorious, and instructed in the most ingenious methods of poisoning their enemies. Some of them keep the bones of their deceased friends in their houses, others burn them, with every thing belonging to them; and having mourned for their deaths a short while, conclude the lamentation with a drinking bout, wherein they are seldom flinchers.

Some of those people, the Omaguas for example, whose country is very populous, and near two hundred and sixty leagues long, live by trafficking with their neighbours, and dress themselves decently in cotton; others of them wear golden plates at their ears and nostrils, and shew themselves good mechanicks in making chairs, all sorts of household furniture, and representations of animals. The jesuits inform us, that the natives of the Amazons river are in general courteous and good natured; they also say, that its banks, on each side, from the city Jaen in the province of Bracamoros, where it begins to be navigable, down to the sea, are covered with tall trees of many useful species, among which may be numbred cloves and sarsaparilla: the woods also abound with tygers, buffaloes, wild boars, &c.

1638 was the first year the jesuits attempted to preach the gospel hereabouts, and they have succeeded wonderfully; their mission, which daily enlarges itself, extending along the banks of three other great rivers; and their capital city St. Francis of Borja, in the province of Manos, being three hundred leagues from Quito, whence they set out. They often make very hazardous voyages in canoes,
among

among these rivers, some of them often falling victims to the cruelty of the savages, as was the case of eight of these reverend fathers who were murdered in 1707. Their industry has been prodigious, having themselves founded thirty-nine towns, and civilized by their preaching and instructions, the people whom they have brought to inhabit them; and besides the many converts they have made, they have moreover contracted friendly alliances with many different nations, for whose conversion they have room to hope. The Portuguese have some towns at the mouth of this river, and a fort upon Rio Negro; and of late they have extended their commerce as far as Quito, and several other distant places in Peru.

The banks of this river are well inhabited by multitudes of people, who are neither so polite as those of Peru, nor yet so barbarous as those of Brazil; they live upon fruit, corn, and roots, are all idolaters, but pay little or no respect to their idols, except when they are going to war. The different nations are reckoned by Sansons and others to be about an hundred and fifty, with villages so very thick as to be in call of one another. Among these the Homagues, a nation near the head of the river, are famous for their cotton manufactures. The Wrosipares for their earthen ware; the Surines, who live betwixt latitude five and ten, for their joiners work; and Topinambes, who inhabit a large isle upon this river, are remarkable for their strength: they make war upon one another, fighting with darts, javelins, bows and arrows, and wearing targets of cane or fish-skin; they make slaves of their prisoners, whom they use otherwise very well.

It is common for the petty kings, who live near the streams that empty themselves into this great river, to decide their quarrels by battling on the water in canoes, and the conqueror generally con-

cludes the war, by eating up the conquered. Their marks of regality are a crown of parrots feathers, a chain of lions teeth or claws hung round the neck, or girt about the middle, and a wooden sword in their hand. Both sexes go naked; the women wear very long hair, and their breasts are as long as their hair; but they pluck their hairs from the crown. The men thrust pieces of cane thro' their ears and under-lips, as well as thro' the skin of the pudenda. At the gristle of their noses they hang glass beads, which wag to and fro when they speak. They are great thieves, but strangers to the use of money, bartering one necessary for another, and glass beads will go a vast way in purchasing from them commodities. They are such skilful marksmen, that they will shoot fish as they swim, and what they catch they eat without bread or salt. Their woods consist of every species of useful and valuable timber, the circumference of many of the trees being five or six fathom. They also abound with delicate venison, and variety of wild fowl, among which we reckon parrots, whereof here are vast plenty, as delicious morsels. Their honey is finely flavoured and very medicinal; they have a balm which they reckon a panacea, and no part of America whatsoever has better corn and roots. Their lakes and rivers are filled with the wholesomest fish, and the manatee and tortoise abound upon their banks; but the fishermen must be upon their guard against the crocodiles, alligators, and water-serpents, which also swarm here. Their gardens are always in bloom, and their fields are crowned with unfading verdure.

That which pesters them worst is the muskitto, for they are more free from venomous insects than either Peru or Brazil.

The

The air of the country in general is temperate, tho' in the midst of the torrid zone; this perhaps is owing to the multitude of rivers that water it, and which annually swelling over their mounds, scatter fertility all around. Perhaps the east winds, which blow most part of the day, contribute, as much as any other cause, to the salubrity of the climate. The first course of this river is from west to east, then it bends to the southward, and after a while directs its main course east to the Atlantic ocean, into which it falls by a mouth between fifty and sixty leagues broad, stretching from the north cape on the coast of Guiana, to Cape Zaparara on the coast of Brazil. Its mouth lies almost under the equator, and its main stream is in the fourth and fifth degree of south latitude; its channel from Junta de los Keyos, about sixty degrees from its head, to the river Maranhon, is from one to two leagues broad; it then widens from three to four, and grows gradually broader as it approaches the ocean. From Junta de los Keyos to Maranhon, its depth is from five to ten fathom: between the latter and Rio Negro it encreases to twelve and deepens to twenty fathoms; after which it is sometimes thirty, sometimes fifty fathoms, and sometimes more in depth, till it comes near the Atlantic: it has no sand banks, nor does the shore shelve so as to make it dangerous for the vessels that approach it. The rivers that run into it are from one hundred to six hundred leagues long, and some that fall into it, on the north side, rise in the first and second degree of north latitude; on the south side some of them begin in the tenth, fifteenth, and others in the one and twentieth degrees of south latitude.

Having been so ample in our description of the River of Amazons, otherwise the Orellana, which is the northern boundary of Brazil, it were injustice

should we omit to say something of the southern boundary of this rich country, which is the river Plata: it lies within the limits of the South Sea company, and is finely situated for opening a trade from the North Sea with Peru, Chili, and other vast countries, which are inexhaustible mines of wealth.

CHAP. IV.

The river Plate described; the many virtues of its waters; of Buenos Ayres and its trade; a description of Paraguay; the vast power and policy of the jesuits in that country; a character of the inhabitants; the fruits, birds, beasts, &c. of Paraguay.

THE river Plate, otherwise Rio de la Plata, begins near a town of the same name, which is a sort of metropolis, consisting of several handsome buildings, besides fifteen churches and four nunneries. It lies in nineteen degrees south latitude. From hence to Buenos Ayres, the distance is five hundred leagues, and the time necessary to pass from one to the other, is about ten weeks. It was called de la Plata by Juan dias de Solis, who first discovered it either in 1512 or 1515, and supposed the adjacent country to abound with gold and silver, he having seen these metals plenty among the people. But in this notion he was deceived, this wealth coming from the banks of the Paraguay, which river after falling into the Plata, keeps it company for some time, without commixing its streams, as may be easily discerned; the Paraguay being quite muddy, the La Plata very clear. This river is seven leagues broad at Buenos Ayres, below which, it discharges itself into the Atlan-



Atlantic ocean, in thirty-five degrees south latitude; and at its mouth, it is by some writers affirmed to be fifty leagues from point to point; it annually overflows the country for many miles, and during the inundation, the people inhabiting its banks put themselves, with all their substance, into canoes, wherein they paddle about till the stream again retires to its proper course. It is so very rapid, that Ovalle affirms it to freshen the sea for some leagues after it falls therein.

The water of the river Plate is very sweet; it clears the lungs, is good against rheums and defluxions, but is of a petrifying nature; of its sand, there are vessels of various figures naturally formed, by means of this refrigerating quality, which look as if they were artificially polished, and in them water will keep a long time very cool. The inhabitants of la Plata have melodious voices, and are naturally inclined to music, which endowment the jesuits take care to cultivate for their own private pleasure, by teaching them to play on all sorts of musical instruments; and of these reverend fathers, among whom the valuable country of Paraguay is divided, having their train of musicians; many of whom manifest very great skill and taste.

The country about this river is quite flat, without any high lands to intercept the prospect, or any springs of water for many leagues: wherefore people who travel within land, carry vessels of water with them; and the oxen, which draw the waggon used in these journeys, will smell water at a vast distance, and running thereto with fury not to be restrained, drink up the very mud which they raise with their feet.

Buenos Ayres, which is the chief town upon this river, lies about fifty leagues from the sea; it consists of two large streets crossing each other; and the houses, each of which is no more than

one story high, were all built of clay, till the jesuits taught the making brick, lime, and tiles. Its principal exports are hides and tallow, with the silver of Peru, and the riches of Chili; all sorts of European goods are imported, and yield a good price. The harbour is a good one, but not sufficiently sheltered from the north-west and west winds. Here is a cathedral and five other churches, with a handsome edifice, wherein the Spanish governor resides; tho' a few leagues up the country the jurisdiction of the jesuits begins, who manage matters so politically, that they permit no intercourse between the Spaniards and the inhabitants of the numerous provinces over which they sway. And they are commonly masters of such well-timed liberality, that they effectually prevent the Spanish governors from enquiring into the worth of their possessions; merchants who enter this country, best known by the name of Paraguay, are not suffered to make any stay here, lest they should report to the astonished world, the luxury and riches of these reverend fathers who first got footing here, under pretence of reducing the Indians, over whom they reign with the most despotic power, to the Spanish government. As the jesuits are composed of people of different nations, consequently have no natural affection to Spain, and are entirely attached to the aggrandisement of the society, their jurisdiction over this race is more easily maintained. They have ten colleges, some whereof are five hundred leagues asunder, and the number of brethren in them all does not exceed one hundred and sixty. The fathers have divided Paraguay into twenty-six cantons or towns, each under the care of one or two missionaries at most, and containing perhaps six or eight thousand souls. These cantons are divided into streets of clay, huts without either chimneys or windows; so that the smoke

smoke is enough to suffocate a person who has not been always used to it. Their chief furniture is a pumpion to hold water, and a tyger or ox skin for a bed, with a hard stone by way of bolster; the better sort lie in a net fastened by way of hammock across the house. Their door is a thick hide; they roast their meat upon a wooden spit before the fire, cutting it off in slices as it turns, and often eating it before it is warmed thro'.

The whole family, father, mother, children, dogs, cats, &c. all lie in the same room in common, for their huts have no partition; and the fathers are careful to match their girls at fourteen, and the boys at sixteen years old, otherwise they would chuse for themselves, and come together, as they often do even under these restrictions, without ceremony. Here is never any dispute about dowry; the principal thing considered is mutual liking: the woman is the courtier; she opens her mind to the father of the canton, having perhaps for some time before wooed the man to whom she inclines, who is immediately sent for; and if he answers in the affirmative, when asked, if he will take that maiden to wife, the match is straight concluded: the man promises to furnish the hearth with fuel, and the woman to supply the house with water. The ceremony being over, the missionary gives them a cabin, five yards of stuff to each for a wedding garment, together with a fat cow, a little salt, and some bread, wherewith perhaps they entertain their parents; but they are allowed no music, nor dancing, nor any merriment that tends in the least to riot or extravagance.

Their complexion is a deep olive colour: the men have round flat faces, thick legs, large joints, and strong black hair. The hair of the women, whose faces are wrinkled, hangs loose over their foreheads, and part of it they twist down to their hips; their arms,

arms, shoulders, and breasts are naked; and round their neck, hands and arms they hang chains of fish bones or of mother of pearl, a triple crown of straw distinguishes the wife of one of their petty princes, and their caciques throw a doe-skin over their shoulders, and wrap another piece of skin round their middle, which hangs below their knees; round their necks they wear collars of coloured feathers, and stick fish-bones, or coloured feathers in their ears and chin, which parts are perforated for that purpose.

Their children run about quite naked; they wrap them in a tyger's skin, and give them the breast as soon as born; but this is soon taken away, and meat half raw given them in lieu thereof to suck. At the death of a near relation the men chop a finger off the left-hand, and if a handsome daughter dies, her skull is preserved as a drinking-cup.

These people, says father Sepp, are so very stupid, that if the instruction of them is only one day neglected, they will forget to make the sign of the cross; and there is scarcely any work which the missionary himself is not obliged to perform, or at least to superintend; even the salting his soup, and rubbing up the church-plate; so that he must be clerk, cook, physician, architect, gardener, smith, painter: yet this character of stupidity cannot be easily reconciled to that of their being so happy at imitation, that they will make watches, organs, and pieces of mechanism, after having nicely inspected their structure; so very exactly, that to distinguish between them is scarcely possible; and one of them copied so exactly a printed mass-book, that asunder it could not be known which was which. The chief distemper among these people are the spotted fever, the bloody flux and worms; by all which, great numbers of them are yearly swept

swept away: the remedy prescribed against the latter of these is a vomit of tobacco leaves, and new milk with the juice of lemon, rue and mint infused therein.

They are so indolent that they must be beaten to their labour; and they take castigation with great patience, giving the fathers thanks for the blows, and calling out Jesus, Maria; so that they are perfect proselytes of passive obedience. They are extremely affected with the taste, elegance, and splendor wherewith the priests ornament their churches: and it would be wonderful were it otherwise; for most of them have beautiful paintings, images finely finished, chandeliers and chalices of massy plate, with a ring of bells and a couple of organs, which the natives are taught to accompany with many musical instruments besides the voice; and with these proficients in that charming science, the fathers spend their hours of dissipation in the most lovely spots that can be imagined, in islands for beauty excelling the dominions of Calypso; where nature's choicest sweets are ever springing, and where laurel, palm, lemon, and citron eternally flourish.

When father Sepp, a German jesuit, from whose account of these people this extract is taken, landed, with some more jesuits, at Japagu, a district of about a month's journey from Buenos Ayres, they were received by a most delicious concert of music, and refreshed with variety of fruits and sweetmeats; while on the water, which was covered with boats lined with fire-arms, and trumpets, a mock-fight was exhibited, and the Indians diverted them with wrestling, dancing, and other innocent feats of activity. The superior and procurator appeared at a distance, each at the head of a troop of Indian horse, and several companies of foot, armed with scymitars, slings, bows and arrows, &c. and clad after the

Spanish fashion, which went through their military exercise with great regularity.

From the shore side they were conducted and followed by thousands of people shouting with joy, thro' a green triumphal arch, purposely erected, to the church, where were several Indian women, so intent at their devotion that they scarcely cast an eye on these reverend new-comers. When the service was ended, the chief of the Indians welcomed them with a brief, but emphatic speech; and was seconded by a woman, whose expression was elegant, and her delivery easy. The following day was spent entirely in merriment, and in the evening they were entertained first with a dance of boys handling pikes and lances; secondly, a dance of two fencing-masters; thirdly, a saraband by six sailors; fourthly, a mock tournament by six boys on horseback: the place was illuminated with ox horns, filled with suet, and set in silver; for they have neither oil nor wax.

Vines thrive extremely well in this soil; and did not the vast quantities of pismires that swarm here spoil the grapes, wine would be very plenty: it is for the most part well-tasted, but sours soon without it be well limed. It sells from twenty to thirty crowns a cask. The soil is extremely fertile; Turkey corn is the only grain they cultivate, and this, when reaped, is laid up in barns by the missionaries, and delivered out to the people as they need it, who having pounded it in a mortar, for they have no mills, either bake it on the coals, or boil it with their meat. The fathers have indeed a few acres of ground sown with wheat, but of this they are so careful, that for a loaf the natives will give two or three horses; not that these sons of humility and the church stand in need of the exchange, for they are absolute masters of every thing, even of the women and children, whom they

they call, perhaps not unjustly, sons and daughters; and they allot to every family their portion of land, and quantities of cows and oxen, tho' these swarm about in herds that have no owners. From Buenos Ayres to Corduba, in the kingdom of Tucuman, there extends a plain two hundred miles long, wherein is seen neither tree nor cottage, the pasturage whereof is very fine, and covered with black cattle, over the horns of which any man may cast a halter, and make them his own that chuses to do so. They are often killed purely for the sake of their tongues, hides, and tallow, and their carcasses exposed a prey to tygers, eagles, &c. which often carry off the young calves, even in the towns. A fat ox may be bought for two or three needles, or a two-penny knife; a horse for trifles of about two shillings value; and a crown's worth of fish-hooks, needles, nails, and knives have been known to purchase a score of horses.

The woods are full of peaches, almonds, figs, and of almost every sort of fruit; they also abound with deer, wild boars, goats, and such flocks of partridges and wild pidgeons, that they may be knocked down with a stick. They also produce honey, which besides its medicinal virtues, serves to mix up with sallad instead of oil and vinegar. In 1691, silver was cheaper here than iron; a two-penny knife fold for a crown, and a bridle-bit for three horses, a two shillings hat for twelve crowns, and a twelve shillings gun for thirty crowns: the ships which carried over father Sepp and some other missionaries, carried back to Spain thirty thousand ox-hides, the worst of them worth six crowns in Europe, which they had for only the trouble of catching and killing the beasts. Tygers often leap their fences, and do them mischief. If you will believe the missionaries, these creatures have such a respect to the clergy, that they never hurt them:

them: they generally strike an ox or cow in the first joint of the neck, then tear it to pieces; they bite the head off a calf, stealing upon it by degrees, and then suck its blood.

Cocks, hens, pigs, goats, and sheep multiply here exceedingly, and mules are very much valued. The rivers abound with the most delicate fish, which the Indians, for want of fishing-hooks, they being very dear, catch with a crooked nail, and often with their hands. The missionaries instruct their congregation of both sexes in writing and reading, at which they are very expert, as well as in other useful employments. The dress of the fathers is a black linen cassock, a cap like a bishop's, leather shoes without heels, and stockings of sheep-skin coloured black.

CHAP. V.

Captain Rogers arrives off the island of Juan Fernandez, the story of Alexander Selkirk; the soil, productions, &c. of this island.

FEARING that we have trespassed too long upon the patience of our reader in describing la Plata and the River of Amazons, we shall hasten after our concert ships now on their way to Juan Fernandez, which they made on the 31st of January, 1708-9; the following day captain Dover and the boat's crew manned the pinnace with a view of going ashore, from which design he was deterred, by perceiving a large fire kindled on the island, which he feared might belong to an enemy; so that he returned on board after night-fall pretty heartily tired.

February the 2d, both ships stood in for the shore, from whence there came such frequent and sudden

and the head off a ...
bite the head off a ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

CHAPTER V.

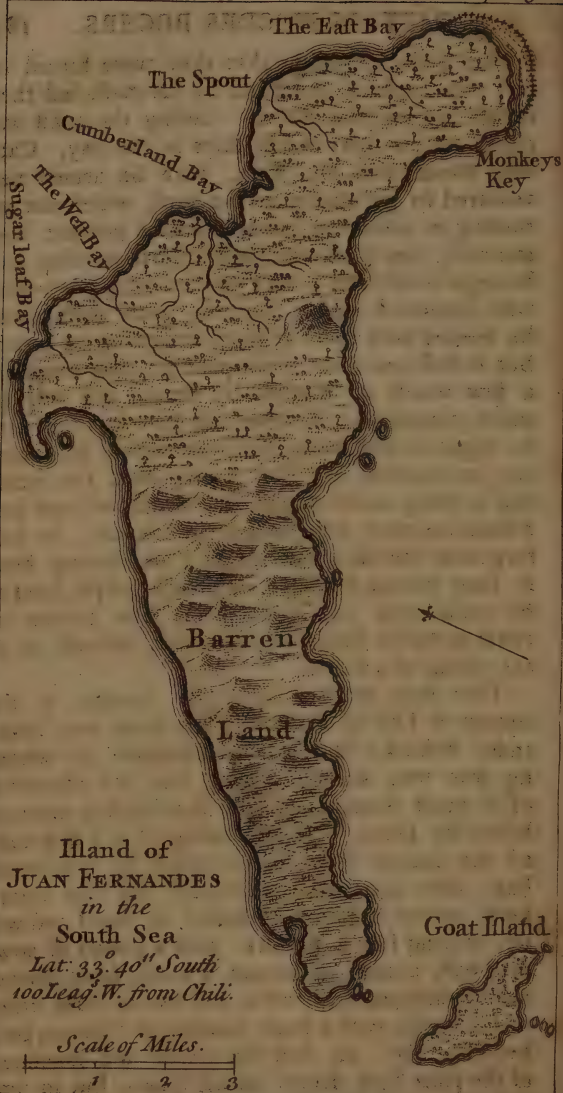
... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...

... and ...
... and ...
... and ...



sudden gusts of wind, that they were forced to reef their topails, and stand by the masts lest they should go by the board. Seeing the coast was clear, and no sight of any ships in the bay, Captain Dover and Mr. Frye, with six armed men ventured to go ashore in the yawl, which not returning in haste, was followed by the pinnace, well manned; they both came back towards evening, and brought with them a man clothed with goats-skin, who appeared wilder than the goats themselves: he seemed very much rejoiced at getting on board, but at first could not speak plainly; only dropping a few words of English by times, and without much connexion; however, in two or three days he began to talk, when he observed that his silence was involuntary, for that having been four years and as many months upon the island, without any human creature with whom to converse, he had forgotten the use of his tongue; and having been so long inured to water, and such insipid food as he could pick up, it was some time before he could reconcile himself to the ship's victuals, or to the taking of a dram.

This man was a native of Largo, in the county of Fife in Scotland; his name was Alexander Selkirk; and captain Dampier, to whom he was well known, giving him the character of a good seaman, he was appointed a mate on board the Duke. He had belonged to a ship called the Cinque Ports, commanded by one Stradling, who upon some difference, set him ashore here, where he had been before to wood and water, leaving him a firelock, with a pound of powder, ball, a knife, a hatchet, a kettle, some mathematical instruments, a bible, and two or three other useful books, with a small quantity of tobacco, bed, bedding, &c. At first the terror and loneliness of the place sunk deeply on his spirits, but in time he

he became inured to it, and got the better of his melancholy. He had erected two huts, one of which served him for a kitchen, the other for a dining room and bed-chamber; they were made of piemento-wood, which supplied him also with fire and candle, burning very clear, and yielding a most refreshing fragrant smell; the roof was of long grass or rushes, and his wainscoting the skins of goats, near five hundred whereof he had killed during his residence here, and caught above five hundred more, which he marked on the ears and then set at liberty.

When his ammunition was exhausted he caught them by running, and so practised was he in that exercise, that the swiftest goat upon the island was scarcely a match for him; and captain Rogers informs us, that during the stay of his people upon this island, Mr. Selkirk went often out with the dogs to hunt goats, whom he always distanced, and frequently tired quite out. On his being first abandoned here, he relished his food, which was boiled goat's flesh and craw-fish, but indifferently, for want of salt; however, in time he got the better of his nicety of palate, and was well enough pleased with the seasoning of the piemento-fruit, which is not unlike the black pepper of Jamaica. When his cloaths were worn out, he made for himself a covering of goat-skin, joined together with thongs, which he had cut with his knife, and which he run thro' holes made with a nail instead of a needle; he had a piece of linen by him, of which he made a sort of shirt to put next his skin, and this was sown in the same manner. He had no shoes left in a month's time, his feet having been so long bare, were now become quite callous; and he was some time on board before he could wear a shoe, his feet swelling considerably under the restriction. The rats at first plagued him

him very much, growing so bold as to gnaw his feet and cloaths while he slept; however, he soon taught them to keep a greater distance, with the assistance of some cats that had been left ashore by the ships; of these and a few kids he made pets, and used to divert himself by dancing the hey among them, and teaching them a thousand tricks. Mr. Selkirk, on his coming to England, supplied Daniel Defoe, who was pillored, with his memoirs, in order to digest them for publication; but that honest writer stole the materials, which he gave to the public, under the name of Robinson Crusoe, and returned Mr. Selkirk his papers, from the profits whereof he was for the most part cut off by this piece of knavery.

The climate of the island of Juan Fernandez is so good that the trees continue green all the year round. The winter lasts no longer than June and July, and is not then severe, there being only a slight frost and a little hail, but sometimes great rains. The heat of the summer is equally moderate; neither is there much thunder, or tempestuous weather of any sort. Mr. Selkirk, to whom the ship's crew gave the name of governor, saw no venomous creature on the island, nor any sorts of beasts, but goats, which had been first put ashore on purpose for breed by Juan Fernando, a Spaniard, who settled there with some families for a time; but the continent of Chili having submitted to the Spaniards, and being a more profitable soil, the planters were tempted to quit this island, altho' it is capable of maintaining a good number of people, and of being made very strong.

The bay is all deep water, and ships may be brought up close to the rocks, if occasion require. The wind blows always over the land, and at worst along

along shore, which makes little or no sea. It is for the most part calm at night, only now and then some land gusts. Near the rocks there are very good fish of several sorts, particularly large craw-fish, easy to be caught; also cavallies, gropers, and other good fish, in as much plenty almost as in Newfoundland at the best fishing-season.

Piemento is the most useful and finest timber on the island, but very apt to split till a little dried; the longest and cleanest is chosen for firing.

Cabbage-trees, bearing excellent heads, are found about three miles up the woods, on the tops of the nearest and lowest mountains. Here are found store of turnips, which in the warm season are very good, and water-cresses grow in the brooks, which are very serviceable in all scorbutic cases.

The soil is a black loose earth, the rocks very rotten, so that without great care it is dangerous climbing for cabbages; besides there are abundance of holes dug in several places by a sort of fowls like puffins, which holes suddenly give way, and endanger a man's bones. Mr. Selkirk says, that in July he has seen snow and ice here, but the spring which is in September, October, and November, is very pleasant, there being then abundance of parsley, purslain, &c. and an herb springing up near the water-side, very useful in fomentations, not much unlike feverfew; the smell of it is rather stronger and more grateful than that of baulm, and being gathered in bundles, dry'd in a shade, and strewed in the tents, it tended much to the speedy recovery of the sick men, of whom there died but two belonging to the Ducheſs.

In November the seals come ashore here to whelp and engender, when the shore is so full of them for a stone's throw, that it is impossible to pass thro' them, and they are so farly that they will not move out of the way, but like an angry dog run at a man, tho'

tho' he have a good stick to beat them; so that it is dangerous to come near them: however, at other times they will make way for a man; and if they did not it would be often impossible to get up from the water-side, for they line the shore, commonly covering above half a mile of ground all round the bay, keeping a continual noise day and night, some bleating like lambs, some howling like dogs or wolves, that they may be heard above a mile from the shore. Their fur is very fine, far beyond any yielded by the otter.

Another strange creature here is the sea-lion: some of these, according to Selkirk, are twenty foot long, weighing not less than two hundred ton. They are striped like the sea dogs, but have a different kind of skin, a head much larger in proportion, prodigious wide mouths, monstrous staring eyes, a face resembling that of a lion, and huge whiskers, the hair of which is stiff enough to make tooth-picks. These creatures come ashore to engender about the latter end of June, and stay till the end of September; during all which time they are never observed to go into the water, but lie in the same spot for months together, at about a musket shot distance from the water side, and take no manner of sustenance; it is surprising what a quantity of oil these creatures yield. Their hair is short and coarse, and their skin thicker than the thickest ox-hide I ever saw.

The only land-birds to be seen here are a sort of black-bird with a red breast, not unlike the English black-bird; and the humming-bird, which is curiously variegated, and no bigger than a large humble bee.

Here is a small but uncertain tide; the spring-tide flows about seven foot.

C H A P. VI.

They set sail from the island of Juan Fernandes, and take two prizes; they stand over to Lobos de la Mar; some account of these islands. Mr. Vanbrugh occasions new disturbance. More prizes taken; a descent upon Guiaquil concerted; the town of Payta surprized. They are discovered in their designs upon Guiaquil.

FEBRUARY the 13th a committee of the principal officers of both ships was held on board the *Duchess*, wherein it was agreed to steer for the island of Lobos de la Mar; and which ever vessel arrived there first, was to leave directions for her consort how to proceed, buried in a glass bottle at the depth of twenty yards, at certain spots which they named. The next day they weighed anchor with a fair gale at S. S. E. and Mr. Vanbrugh was the day after received again, in his old birth on board the *Duke*; on the 4th of March every man was put to an allowance of three pints of water per day, that their stock might hold out, they being resolved to keep out to sea, in hope of taking some good prizes from Lima or elsewhere; according to which expectation, on the 16th of March they spied a sail, and the *Duchess* being nearest took her.

She was a vessel of about 16 ton, belonging to Payta, and bound to Cheripe, with a small sum of money on board to purchase flour. The master's name was Antonio Heliagos, a Mustee, begotten between an Indian and a Spaniard; his crew consisted of eight men, one of them a Spaniard, one a negro, and the rest Indians: from these they learned that there had been no French ships in these seas
for

for upwards of six months; and that the French were so hated at Lima, that it was as much as a Frenchman's life was worth to be seen in the streets.

After they had manned the prize with English sailors, they haled off close on a wind for Lobos, having shot within it, and had they not been better informed by the crew of the prize, might have endangered their ships by running in farther, because there are shoals between the island and the main.

The prisoners told them there had been no enemy in those parts since captain Dampier, which was four years ago. They likewise informed them, that captain Stradling's ship, the Cinque Ports, who was Dampier's consort, foundered on the coast of Barbacom, where he, with scarce more than six or seven of his men were saved, and being taken in their boat had been kept ever since prisoners at Lima, where they lived much worse than poor Selkirk, whom they had left ashore on the desolate island of Juan Fernandez, had done.

March 17th they came to anchor betwixt the two islands of Lobos de la Mar, together with their prize, which, on the following day they prepared to fit out as a cruiser, under the command of Mr. Stratton, calling her the Beginning; on the 20th having manned her with thirty-two men and stocked her with provisions she put to sea, and on the 26th the Ducheſs brought in a prize which they had taken in company; her burthen was fifty tons, with a cargoe of timber, some cocoa nuts, and tobacco, which latter was distributed among the crews of the Duke and Ducheſs. On the 30th having cleaned and refitted the last prize they gave her the name of the Increase, and then removed the sick of both ships on board her, under the care of a doctor, and Mr. Selkirk, as master.

The two largest islands, called Lobos de la Mar, (to distinguish them from those called Lobos de la Terra)

Terra) are about sixteen leagues from the main, and six miles in length. There is another small island close by the eastermost to windward, not half a mile long, with some rocks and breakers near the shore. The soil is a hungry white clay mixed with sand and rocks; there is no fresh water, nor yet is there any verdure on the islands, but vast numbers of vultures or carrion crows, which look so like turkeys that one of the ship's officers blessed himself at the first sight of them, hoping to fare deliciously; nay so very eager was he to taste them, that he would not stay till the boat could put him ashore, but leaped into the water with his gun in his hand, and getting near enough to a parcel let fly at them, but when he came to take up his game, it stunk so intolerably that he was laughed at by all his messmates.

Besides these birds, here are penguins, pellicans, boobies, gulls, and a sort of fowls like teal, that nestle in holes on the land; the men got loads of them, which when skinned, they affirmed to be very good meat. They found abundance of bull-rushes and empty jars that the Spanish fishermen had left on shore; for all over this coast they use jars, instead of casks, for oil, wine, and all sorts of liquids.

Here is abundance of seals, and some sea lions; the seals are much larger than at Juan Fernandez, but the fur not so fine: they killed several with a design to eat their livers; but one of the crew, a Spaniard, dying suddenly after eating them, this sort of food was forbid. The prisoners accounted old seals very unwholesome.

The wind always blowing fresh over the land brought an ugly loathsome smell aboard from the seals ashore, which gave captain Rogers a violent head ach, and every body else complained of it. They had found nothing so offensive at Juan Fernandez.

Their

Their prisoners told them that it was expected the widow of the late viceroy of Peru would shortly embark for Aquapulco, with her family and riches, and stop at Payta to refresh, or sail near in sight, as customary, in one of the king's ships of thirty-six guns; and that about eight months before a ship with two hundred thousand pieces of eight on board, besides a cargo of liquors and flour, had passed by Payta for Aquapulco. They added, that they left one Mr. Morel, in a stout ship laden with dry goods, bound for Lima, recruiting at Payta, where was expected in a few days, a French-built ship, belonging to the Spaniards, to come from Panama richly laden, with a bishop aboard. Payta is a common recruiting-place to those who go to or from Lima, or most ports to windward, in their trade to Panama, or any part of the coast of Mexico. Upon this advice they agreed to spend as much time as possible cruising off of Payta, without discovering themselves, for fear of hindering their other designs.

April the 1st the sea was entirely the colour of blood, which appeared upon inspection to be caused by the spawn of fish. On the 2d lieutenant Frye was dispatched in the pinnace after a prize which came then in sight; he soon brought her in, she proved the ship before spoken of, commanded by Mr. Morrel and his brother; her burthen was five hundred tons, and besides her cargo, she had on board fifty negroes, and many passengers bound from Panama to Lima, with a fine stock of fresh provision; the command of this vessel was given to Mr. Frye: and the day following the Beginning took a prize of thirty-five tons burthen, bound from Guayaquil to Chancay; by which vessel they were advised that the bishop, of whom mention has been lately made, was still at Payta, and would soon pass the road wherein they now lay in his way to Lima. In consequence of which information the cruisers

were

were disposed in such stations as seemed to bid fairest for shortening his lordship's voyage.

On the 7th of April Mr. Vanbrugh continuing still to behave in a very riotous and an unbecoming manner, was in full council of the officers of both ships turned out of his post, being voted mutinous, and not fit to be entrusted ; and on the 12th an attack upon Guiaquil was unanimously agreed upon ; the best regulations possible being made to satisfy the men with respect to plunder, and to hinder them from mutinying.

April the 15th the French-built prize, which they had so long expected, appeared in sight, and being attacked by the boat and the pinnace, repulsed them having killed two men, one of whom was captain Rogers's brother ; he was shot thro' the head, however she struck soon after to the Ducheſs. She had five hundred Spaniards, and an hundred mulattoes, negroes, and Indians on board, but they had set the bishop ashore together with his treasure and attendants, about ten days before at point St. Helena.

On the 17th all the men intended for the descent upon Guiaquil, to the amount of two hundred and one, were put on board the barks, each having a ticket delivered to him, setting forth to what company he belonged, and his particular station ; a measure which was thought absolutely necessary to prevent the men from straggling ; it had been before agreed upon that the command of this affair should be by turns divided between captain Dover, captain Rogers, and captain Courtney ; captain Dover to have the lead at landing, by way of compliment, as he was part owner of the concert ships, and a man of good natural parts, much improved by experience. As there were three hundred prisoners in custody, irons were put on board the Duke and the other vessels, in order to intimidate them, the men left to guard them being not much more than one third of that

that number. Captain Fry and captain Cooke, to whom the care of the duke and dutchefs were committed, were directed to keep out at sea for forty-eight hours, to prevent their being discovered by the enemy; and afterwards to wait the event of the expedition at Punta Arena, off which place captain Rogers and his barks, together with captain Courtney, came to anchor about ten at night; where taking to their boats with forty men, they made for Puna, an island covered with swamps and over-run with mangroves.

On the evening of the 19th, they approached nearer the town of Puna, where they expected there was a look-out for them, disposing themselves to avoid being discovered, in such a manner, that they had the appearance of drift timber upon the water. With the break of day of the 20th, they got up close with the town, securing all the canoes; but notwithstanding the alarm was spread, by an Indian who escaped them, they secured the lieutenant governor of the town, and with him about twenty people, by whom they were assured that the inhabitants of Guiaquil could have no intimation of their being so near; those who had fled from Puna having taken refuge in the woods. In this town, they found a paper sent from Lima, copies of which it seems were dispersed all along the coast, giving notice of captain Dampier being in those seas; however, they were pretty well satisfied that they should be able to execute all they designed, before any forces from Lima should reach this quarter, sufficient to oppose them.

Captain Rogers left captain Courtney and captain Dampier at Puna about two in the afternoon of the 20th, and went in quest of the barks; admiring they did not come in sight, they being now a tide and half behind. He carried with him the

lieutenant-governor of Puna, and went with the great launch and pinnace, designing to join captain Courtney and captain Dampier again, who were to lie all night in the river, to prevent being discovered by any advice going up before them to Guaiquil. He found the barks about four o'clock, four leagues below Puna. It seems they had been misled by the pilot of the dutchess's bark, who was not so well acquainted with the road, as they thought, or he pretended to be, the most skilful pilot being in captain Rogers's boat, nor were the rest of the pilots so very careful as could have been wished at so critical a juncture as this was; however, captain Rogers had ordered one of them, who got drunk at Puna, to be severely whipped in sight of all the men; which necessary example had the desired effect upon the rest.

Captain Rogers was not aboard above half an hour before low water, and had just time to embark captain Dover and part of his company in the launch, and as many more as they could carry in their pinnace to get before the barks up the river. They rowed till twelve at night, when judging it high water, they came to a grappling. It blew fresh, was very dark, with a small rolling sea; and the boat being crammed with men, captain Rogers declared he had rather have been in a storm at sea, than here; but in regard to the undertaking, he thought no fatigue too hard.

At day-break they saw a bark above them in the river. They thought it to be a stranger, and sent out their pinnace to her. By eight o'clock, they were on board her, and found it to be their own bark; which the honest pilot had brought so high the last tide. They had no sight of the Duchess's bark, since they had left

left her the night before. About ten, they came up to captain Courtney and captain Dampier, who told them they had kept a good look-out, and that nothing had passed them up the river. About noon it was high water. They lay with the boats under the mangroves all the ebb, and the bark off in the river. They were now about half way up to Guiaquil from Puna, and might have gone farther, but that there was a plantation or farm near at hand which would have discovered them, and alarmed the town, should they have gone higher before night.

April the 2d it was very hot, and they were pestered and stung grievously by the musketoes, as they lay under the mangroves. At six in the evening, the barks and boats made way up the river. By twelve at night, they were in sight of the town with all their boats, in which were one hundred and ten men. They now saw a very great fire on the top of an adjoining hill, and lights in the town. In half an hour, they were a-breast of it, and ready to land, but delayed a while, as the lights appeared to encrease not only on the hill, but in and about the town. They enquired of their Indian pilots, whether it was any saint's day, or what might be the occasion of it? and were answered that it must be an alarm. It was still very dark, and whilst they lay driving on the river, it being just high water, they heard a Spaniard on the shore talking loudly that Puna was taken, and that the enemy were coming up the river. This made them conclude it was an alarm. Immediately after, they heard bells, together with the noise of voices, and then a volley of small arms and two great guns. Above an hour was spent in debate between captain Dover, captain Courtney, and captain Rogers, whether they should land. The lieutenants in all the boats were con-

sulted; but they differed in opinion, and few were for landing in the night.

It drew near two in the morning, and the ebb run so strong, that the great boat and yall could not row up to land; so that it being too late to attempt the town, captain Rogers advised them to fall down the river out of sight, to meet their barks, and land with the morning flood. Upon this, all the boats drove down with the ebb, about a league below the town, where they lay till day-break, and saw their bark, Mr. Glendall commander, brought by the honest Indian pilot a mile above them; they having passed him in the night. They rowed back to him and recruited their men as well as they could. There they found the water fresh, and drank of it. The bark lay against a wood of tall trees close by the shore, and they kept a file of musketeers with their arms pointing into the wood, with orders to fire if they saw any men; who accordingly kept firing a musket now and then, to prevent ambuscades. About three, their yall and launch came aboard, for they could not row back with them to the bark till the tide slackened. At ten, they saw the dutchess's bark come in sight. Captain Rogers immediately ordered the anchor to be got up to fall on the town, which was about two miles from them; but captain Dover opposed it, pressing that they might have a consultation with as many of the officers as were present, and to lie in the boat a-stern of the bark; that what was debated might not be overheard by the rest of the company. They were accordingly immediately assembled, and captain Dover insisted on the difficulty of attempting the enemy, now they had been so long alarmed, alledging they should but throw away their own and their men's lives, or else weaken themselves so much, that they should be unable to perpetrate any

CAPTAIN WOODS ROGERS.

any thing of consequence during the remainder of the voyage; that the town appeared large, and consequently was better able to resist, than they were to maintain, the attack; and tho' the Spaniards in these parts had no extraordinary fighting character, yet if they armed the mullatoes, as they generally did on the like occasions, the attempt might be found very desperate. He concluded that their best method would be to send a trumpeter, with proposals to the enemy to trade with them for the cargoes of negroes and other goods aboard their prizes; that an immediate meeting should be appointed, the prices for the negroes and goods fixed, and hostages given them for the performance within a limited time; and observed, if they agreed to these measures, there was no need of landing.

This proposal captain Rogers opposed with the best arguments he could think of, urging the necessity of an immediate descent, lest the enemy, gaining time by their delays, might send off their wealth, and strengthen themselves, so as to bid defiance to all attempts. The majority siding with captain Rogers, the descent was at once agreed upon, and by way of compliment to captain Dover, who was a part owner in the ships, he was appointed to lead the attack, agreeing in case he took the town, to give the watch-word that night; as captain Courtney and captain Rogers were to relieve him by turns. But this resolution did not hold, for captain Dover reflected on captain Rogers, telling that he should be answerable for all the damage the owners might sustain from this ill-concerted expedition. By these reflections, and some other people's indifferency, which manifested heart-burnings and partial divisions among the men, captain Rogers had reason to doubt of his success; wherefore he thought it best to give in to captain Dover's measures, and to send proposals to the

enemy by two of their prisoners, for whose return within an hour, the remaining prisoners should become bound; and this proceeding was thought better than sending two trumpeters, nor was there one man who seemed displeased at it.

CH A P. VII.

Various proceedings at Guiaquil; that city at length ransomed and evacuated.

IN consequence of the measures taken notice of in the preceding chapter, the captain of the French-built prize and the lieutenant-governor of Puna were sent on shore in a boat, with a proper commission and a strict charge to return within the hour. In the mean while, the bark ran up and lay at anchor opposite to the middle of the town.

As they sailed up, they saw four barks put off from the town, to go higher up the river, in pursuit of which, they dispatched their boats well manned and armed, to which the enemy soon surrendered and were brought off. Mean while the two prisoners returned from the town, with a Spanish officer, who said, that at his return, the corregidore or governor, with another gentleman, would come off and treat.

Wherefore he was soon put ashore, and immediately after came off the corregidore, with another gentleman, whom captain Dover and captain Rogers met in their boat with a linguist, and carried aboard one of the barks, that had been taken endeavouring to escape up the river.

April the 22d, nothing was done, but securing the barks and treating with the governor. Several of the prisoners affirmed that they did not doubt to find credit here, and that they would also traffic;

traffic; so that there were now hopes of more profit by selling their cargoes and negroes, than by ransacking the town. The corregidore agreed for the goods at one hundred and forty pieces of eight per bale, one with another; and talked of the price for other things.

About five in the afternoon, he desired to go ashore, that he might prevail with the other gentlemen to agree with him, and promised to return to confer with the three commanders on board one of their prizes, at eight in the evening. They ordered their linguist to get candles lighted, and the best entertainment they could provide; but the time being elapsed, and he not appearing, it gave them great reason to suspect they were tricked; therefore they sent their boats again above the town, and alarmed them afresh in the night. Their centinels hailed a boat after midnight which came on board them with one gentleman, who said he was sent by the corregidore with a present of two bags of flour, two sheep, and two hogs ready killed, two jars of wine, and two of brandy; and to assure them, the governor would have been with them, according to the appointment, had not one of the chief merchants concerned been absent; but he would come off in the morning by seven o'clock, and requested them to believe he was a man of honour; for tho' he had been considerably reinforced since he left them, and more men were continually coming into the town, he resolved to discharge his promise of yesterday; and therefore hoped they would forbear any hostilities above the town, because the women and children were there in sanctuary, with little or no wealth to prompt them to plunder.

The three commanders returned their compliments to the corregidore, and their kind thanks for his present, observing that they were sorry they

had nothing to oblige him with by way of return; but desired he might be told from them, that they all wondered at his not keeping his word, and still depended that he would convince them he was a man of honour, by meeting them at seven o'clock the next morning; otherwise the treaty was at an end.

They were all uneasy till seven in the morning, when they saw a flag of truce on board one of the new ships, where supposing the governor to be, they manned their pinnace, and sent their linguist to give their promise, that if the corregidore came on board the prize, he should be at liberty to return. Upon this invitation, he came aboard with three persons more, and they ordered their two frigate barks to go close under the shore, next the best part of the town, and that every thing should be kept in readiness for landing, in case they should break off the agreement. The first proposals made by the three captains, were, that fifty thousand pieces of eight should be paid by way of contribution for the town, and the two new ships that lay near the shore, together with the six barks: besides which, the governor was to oblige himself to buy off the cargoes of negroes, &c. belonging to the prizes, at certain stipulated prices to be paid within the term of nine days; to the latter, the Spaniards agreed, offering to leave two hostages with captain Dover, &c. till they had performed it, which were not thought sufficient; but they would not give near that sum demanded for the town and ships, alledging, that they had men and arms sufficient in the town and in the ships, to protect them.

The captains concluding from their delay, that they only wanted to gain time, informed them that they could seize the ships in a minute, or set them on fire; that they did not fear taking the town at
pleasure;

pleasure; that they looked upon it as much their own as if it was in their possession, and that they must have the money, or good hostages; otherwise before night they would set not only the ships but Guiaquil in a blaze.

By noon, the corregidore and the other gentlemen agreed with them to buy both cargoes, and to give hostages for forty thousand pieces of eight for the town, the two new ships and the barks; but neither of them were to sign this agreement till it was confirmed by the chief men of the town ashore, which the corregidore was to procure in an hour's time.

April the 23d, about one in the afternoon, the governor was put ashore in captain Rogers's pinnace. Some of the men insisted on stopping him, because not long before an Indian came in a canoe from the shore, to know whether the governor had agreed, as his men were in readiness to begin the fight, in case he had not; waiting for nothing but his orders. This message was delivered in captain Rogers's hearing, and occasioned disputes about keeping the corregidore prisoner. Those who were for it, urged, that if he went ashore, the enemy would certainly fight them; and that, as he had broke his word the night before, he was not now to be trusted; but captain Rogers opposed the detaining him, because he had given him his honour to the contrary. At last it was agreed he should be sent ashore.

The three gentlemen however staid as hostages, at the corregidore's request, never doubting but the agreement would soon be ratified.

The time allotted for answer being past, a messenger from the town came to inform them they could raise but thirty thousand pieces of eight, and did not mention a word of the trade; so they sent their linguist and one prisoner with this last message, that

if, in half an hour, three more good hostages, for the forty thousand pieces of eight agreed on, were not sent down, they would strike the flag of truce, land, give no quarter, and fire the town and ships. In the mean time they saw the Spaniards quit the two new ships, and they took possession of them. Their messenger returned, and in half an hour, three men more from the town came to the bank opposite the captain's barks, holding out a white handkerchief, as if to parley again. Their resolution, they said, was to give thirty-two thousand pieces of eight, and no more: to which proposal the English replied, they had done treating, and bid the Spaniards a-shore retire forthwith, and keep out of their shot, as they valued their lives.

They all at once struck their white flag, and let fly their martial colours. Captain Rogers then ordered two guns, of about six hundred weight each, mounted on carriages, into the great launch, and filled their three boats with men in order to land: he afterwards went himself in one pinnace, captain Courtney in another, and captain Dover in the launch, the three boats carrying about seventy men. They towed the launch a-shore: the third lieutenant tarried a-board the bark, with ten men, to play their guns into the town as they landed; where the Spaniards made a formidable show when compared to their little army.

As soon as they landed every man fired on his knee at the brink of the bank, then loading advanced and called to their bark to forbear firing for fear of hurting their own men: notwithstanding they still kept loading and firing, the enemy made but one discharge, and retired back to their guns, where their horse drew up a second time: the English at last came up to their first houses, and as they opened the streets saw four guns pointed at them before a spacious church; but as soon as ever they came in sight the horse

horse moved off with precipitation. This encouraged captain Rogers to call to his men to run and seize the guns, he himself advancing with about ten men within pistol shot of them; which boldness so intimidated the enemy that, after one general discharge, they took to their heels and left their pieces to fall into the hands of captain Rogers and his followers, some of whom possessed themselves of the church, where they took about a dozen prisoners. Many more of the English coming up with captain Courtney and captain Dover, captain Rogers remained to secure that post with a few men, while the rest marched to the other end of the town. From the time they landed to the time they seized the guns and took possession of the church, which lay above a furlong from the water-side, was not more than half an hour. Captain Dampier was now posted, with twenty-five men, at the guns, which were turned on the enemy, who quickly evacuated the town. By this time the remaining part of the English were landed, and marched after captain Courtney and captain Dover. All the men in general behaved with great courage; but, like sailors, would be kept under but little command as soon as the first piece was fired; however, after the attack, they kept handsomely together, and forbore hard drinking.

Captain Rogers overtook captain Dover and captain Courtney at the other end of the town, where he left captain Courtney to keep guard at a church, and then Rogers returned to his first post, whilst Dampier with his men went to reinforce Dover and Courtney.

Thus they were in quiet possession of the town by sun-set, and made a proper disposition of their guards, having met no opposition after the enemy quitted the great church. In the evening Rogers

went on board the barks, settled a good watch, and then returned a-shore to the church.

Captain Dover now set the houses that fronted the church on fire, which burned all night and the next day. There was a hill near his quarter, and thick woods within a musket-shot of the church, where the enemy were almost continually popping at him during the whole night; and the next day some few parties made their appearance, but retired on receiving a volley of small shot.

The enemy might have done Dover great mischief in the night had they been courageous, since his friends were not near enough to assist him; for as the town was long, the whole could not be kept without dividing the men into parties at great distances; but his firing the houses covered the worst part of his quarters that night, and was of much service to him. Captain Courtney relieved him at day-break, and then both quitted these quarters, as being too much exposed to the enemy.

An Indian that was taken prisoner, told Rogers, that he knew of much money up the river in bark-logs and houses; upon which twenty-one men were detached out of the English companies, and sent in a boat up the river. Rogers would fain have sent both pinnaces to seize that wealth, as they had found little or none in the town; but the others would by no means consent to it, lest the enemy might engage them the next morning in the absence of their boats and men. Rogers desired that Courtney's boat might go because the largest, and she was accordingly manned, out of both companies.

In the morning the English began with iron crows, and other instruments, to break open the churches and all the store-houses, cellars, &c. which action was soon done to very little purpose, for
scarcely

scarcely any thing of value was left in the town but flour, pease, beans, and jars of wine and brandy. They began to carry these to the water-side, but having hot, wet, and unhealthful weather, and their men being fatigued, they became so weak that they could not work well at this new employment. They said would have had the boarded floor of the church taken up to look amongst the dead for treasure, but captain Rogers would not suffer it, because of a contagious distemper that had swept off a great number of people here not long before.

They found but two of the enemy killed in the town, and one prisoner, who was wounded in the head; but on further enquiry were told that fifteen of them were killed and wounded, among whom was the chief gunner, an Irishman. On the side of the English two men were wounded.

April the 24th the English kept their colours flying on the tower of the church, Dover keeping guard there all the day, whilst Rogers and Courtney took care to have every thing that they found useful carried to the water-side.

They then sent the lieutenant of Puna, and another prisoner, into the country, with proposals to ransom the town, a great part of the enemy being in the woods about a league from them. The prisoners returned in the evening with an ambiguous answer, but desired they might be permitted to go again in the morning, in hope to prevent the burning of the town.

About ten at night the boat that they had sent up the river returned, having been away about twenty-four hours. It had proceeded seven leagues, and sixteen of the men landed at six several places, the other five kept the boat, having a swivel gun to defend themselves. At one place they separated, and four of the men rambled so far into the woods to look for wealth that, after three hours search, they could

not

not find the way back to the rest; but by accident they met again and got to the boat. One of the men was shot thro' the hinder part of the neck by the enemy, but the wound was not dangerous, and none of the rest were hurt. They chased thirty-five horsemen, that were well armed, coming to assist the inhabitants of Guiaquil. They reported the houses up the river to be full of women, particularly at one place, where there were above a dozen handsome, well-dressed young women, from whom they took several gold chains and ear-rings, but were otherwise so civil to them that the ladies offered to dress victuals for them, and brought them a cask of good liquor. Some of their largest gold chains were concealed, and wound about their middles, legs and thighs; but the ladies in these hot countries, being thinly clad with silk and fine linen, the men, by pressing on the outside of their apparel, felt their chains, and by their linguist modestly desired them to take them off with their own hands and surrender them. This is mentioned as a proof of the sailors modesty, and in respect to Mr. Connely and Mr. Selkirk, the late governor of Juan Fernandez, who commanded this party.

They called at this house for provisions as they returned down the river; and having been so civil at first, their fair landladies expressed no uneasiness or surprize at a second visit. They had taken a large empty bark in their progress, but abandoned her, and brought down with them, in gold chains, ear-rings and plate, to the value of one thousand pounds, with a negroe that had been serviceable in discovering part of the hidden treasure; but they all agreed that the want of another boat lost them much more than they got; for whilst they searched on one side, the canoes and bark-logs crossed the river in their sight, carrying many people with their substance out
of

of reach, which they could not prevent, not having another boat to pursue them.

They also informed captain Rogers, that in the places where they had been above the town, they had seen more than three hundred armed horse and foot in several parties, so that they apprehended the enemy's design was to gain time by pretending to ransom, till they were capable of attacking them with vast odds. But the English, for fear of being surprized, agreed to assemble in a body at every alarm, which was beat several times a day on the sight of any large parties, tho' it in some measure retarded their business.

Five jars of powder, some matches and shot, a good quantity of ordinary arms, three drums, and several swords and lances were found in the church, where captain Rogers picked up the corregidore's gold-headed cane, and another with a silver head; for among the Spaniards none carry a cane but the chief officers, and of those none under a captain must wear one with a silver or gold head.

After captain Dover had quitted his post, in the morning one of his men came to tell him that the enemy was coming down the hill. On this the alarm was given, and part of the men being left with the guns, captain Rogers marched with the rest, and met captain Courtney with part of his company on the bridge retiring. He reported that the enemy was numerous and well armed in the north end of the town. Rogers however desired that they might join and march against them, to which Courtney consented, and their whole force, not exceeding seventy men, they went forward; but the Spaniards, not chusing to face them, retired into the woods as they advanced, from whence they sometimes assailed them with firing shots, which the English returned at random, none of them being hurt.

Courtney

Courtney and Rogers not agreeing with regard to keeping possession of that end of the town, they marched back again, and took what they liked best along with them, and carried it a-board their barks.

April the 25th, about one in the afternoon, the prisoners returned with an offer of thirty thousand pieces of eight as a ransom for the town, ships, and barks, to be paid in twelve days, which the captain did not approve of, nor would they have staid for a much larger sum, being well apprized of the enemies having dispatched an express to Lima to expedite the expected succours, unto the arrival of which it was their design if possible to have delayed the concert ships. The next morning the three captains agreed upon sending this final answer, viz. that the town should be set on fire by three in the afternoon if sufficient hostages for the payment of thirty thousand pieces of eight, within six days, were not immediately delivered: in the mean time a cessation of arms should be granted, and the Spaniards be at liberty to come down to Puna to trade for negroes and the rest of their cargoes.

A Frenchman belonging to captain Rogers's company, who had been sent with some others to strengthen captain Courtney's quarters, standing centinel at night, shot one of the sailors dead. This accident was occasioned by a severe order that had been given at their quarters, to shoot every person in the night who did not answer on being challenged, which the deceased could not do, as being ignorant of French, in which language the centinel had called out to him.

In the afternoon an officer and nine men were engaged at the north-end of the town with a party of Spaniards, whom they chased into the woods, but following them too far were attacked by others, and one of the Englishmen was shot thro' the calf of his leg; and another received a shot, whilst he was endeavouring

vouring to recharge his piece, upon the middle of the pole-ax that hung by his side, which made an impression on the iron, and bruised the part immediately under it, but it proved a piece of armour well-placed. The other man, who was wounded in the leg, by his irregularity and hard drinking, fell into a fever that carried him off. Captain Courtney's chief lieutenant, having his pistols hanging at his side, one of them unluckily discharged itself against the outside of the thickest part of his leg, and left a bullet in the flesh, but without endangering his life. These accidents, and the encreasing boldness of the enemy, influenced captain Courtney to draw off with his company to the quarters of captain Rogers.

At night they all lay in the church, round which they kept centinels within a musket shot of each other, with a charge to challenge each other every quarter of an hour, to prevent their being surprized in the night; every man keeping his arms and ammunition in exact order, and being ready to rise at the least alarm. for the enemy were continually popping at them from the woods; the weather was very hot and faint, the streets were deep and slippery, and the way to the water-side very bad; all which circumstances contributed greatly to incommode them.

April the 26th, about two in the afternoon, the prisoners returned from the enemy's camp with two horsemen, who told them that their last proposal was agreed to; and, that the lieutenant-governor of Puna, who had been very instrumental in the conclusion of it, together with an old gentleman, on board one of the barks, were to remain as hostages for the performance of it; and these messengers added, that if these two gentlemen were not thought sufficient security, they themselves were also ready to remain prisoners; which offer was refused, and they

they were permitted to return to their camp, with their messenger, who was to bring back their agreement signed, which was worded as follows :

“ Whereas the city of Guiaquil, lately in subjection to Philip V. king of Spain, is now taken by storm, and in possession of the captains Thomas Dover, Woodes Rogers, and Stephen Courtney, commanding a body of her majesty of Great Britain’s subjects : we, the underwritten persons, are content to become hostages for the said city, and continue in the custody of the said captains Thomas Dover, Woodes Rogers, and Stephen Courtney, till thirty thousand pieces of eight shall be paid to them for the ransom of the said city, two new ships and six barks ; during which time no hostilities shall be committed on either side between this and Puna ; the said sum to be paid at Puna in six days from the date hereof, and then the hostages to be discharged, and all the prisoners to be delivered immediately ; otherwise the said hostages do agree to remain prisoners, till the said sum is discharged, in any other part of the world. In witness whereof we have voluntarily set our hands this 27th day of April, old stile, in the year of our Lord 1709.”

The two hostages lay this night at the English quarters, and next morning were put on board ship, while the English drew off from the city with drums beating and colours flying, leaving the Spaniards at liberty to return to their houses. Captain Rogers, who brought up the rear with a few men, picked up many pistols, cutlasses and pole-axes, that the men dropped thro’ laziness as they marched, which shewed that they were grown weary of a military life, and that it was time to depart. Their hardest task was to get the guns down to the water, the earth being so soft that they who helped to carry them

them sunk half leg deep. To make it as easy as possible, a frame of bamboe canes was contrived, under which six men could stand and bear an equal weight on their shoulders. Tho' they were large four pounders, the gun and the frame did not exceed fifteen hundred weight; but had not the prisoners helped them they would not have been able to perform their work.

April the 27th, in the afternoon, every thing was settled on board the barks as well as they could; the men were separated on board the prizes, where the English had put most of their goods and plunder, being about two hundred and thirty bags of flour, beans, pease and rice, fifteen jars of oil, about one hundred and sixty jars of other liquors, some cordage, iron ware and small nails, with about four half jars of powder, a tun of pitch and tar, a parcel of cloathing and necessaries, and about one thousand two hundred pounds in plate, ear-rings, &c. one hundred and fifty bales of dry goods, four guns, and about two hundred Spanish ordinary useles arms and musket barrels, a few packs of indigo, cocoa, &c. with about one ton of loaf-sugar. Abundance of goods were left in the town, besides liquors of most sorts and sea stores, with several warehouses full of cocoa, divers ships on the stocks; and two new ships unrigged lying at anchor in the bay.

About two in the afternoon, a Dutchman that had been missed the day before, rose out of his brandy-wine fit and came a-board. This was the only man, since the taking Guiaquil, who had so much transgressed by drinking.

About eight in the morning the English set sail with all their barks, and at parting made what show and noise they could with drums, trumpets and guns, and thus took leave of the Spaniards very cheerfully, but not half so well pleased as if they had
taken

THE VOYAGE OF

taken the town by surprize, for they were well assured from all hands, that at least they should have then got above two hundred thousand pieces of eight; gold and silver plate wrought and unwrought, besides jewels, and a much greater plenty of necessaries, tho' the place had not been poorer for forty years, by reason that a sudden fire, about eighteen months before, had destroyed the better half of the town.

C H A P. VIII.

Guiaquil described: the English sailors return to their ships: an account of the men lost in this enterprize: they dismiss their hostages and sail.

GUIAQUIL, the metropolis of the province, is about a mile and half long, divided into the old and new town, which are joined by a wooden bridge above half a mile in length, designed only for foot passengers. There are some houses at a distance on each side of the bridge, and those of both towns may amount to four or five hundred, besides five churches: the inhabitants are about two thousand in number. Their chief church is that of St. Jago, or St. James, the apostle, wherein are three altars, and before it is a handsome square; the others are those of St. Augustine, St. Francis, St. Dominic, and St. Ignatius: the latter belongs to the Jesuits. Before that of St. Dominic there is a square with a half moon, upon which they formerly planted guns, but none were mounted when the English took it. Three of these churches were very lofty, one of them stone, and well ornamented with carved work, pictures, &c. In that of St. Augustine there was a good organ, but the priests had carried off all the plate belonging to them into the woods time enough to secure it.

Some

Some of the houses were very high, several of them being brick, but mostly built of timber and the meaner sort of bamboes. There is one regular street along the side of the river to the bridge, and from thence along the old town. The situation is in a low swampy soil, - so dirty in winter that without the bridge they could scarce go from one house to another. The town is governed by a corregidore, who is their chief magistrate, and appointed by the king. It is well seated for trade and ship-building, lying four leagues from Point Arena, and seven from Puna. The river is large, being the recevoir of several others, and having many villages and farm-houses on its banks, with abundance of mangroves and sarsaparilla, which impregnating its waters make them efficacious against the French pox; but in the time of floods it is unwholesome, because of the poisonous roots and plants washed down from the mountains. They have plenty of provisions, black cattle, sheep, goats, swine, poultry, several sorts of ducks unknown in Europe, and store of horses. The water of the river is fresh at low water almost as far as Puna.

An Englishman who had lived here some time, informed the captain that, in the foregoing December, they had three weeks rejoicing for the birth of the prince of Asturias, when they mustered one thousand one hundred foot and five hundred horse in arms, besides a much greater number that had none; but most of those troops came from the adjacent country. During this solemnity they had baited many bulls to death after the manner of Spain, and run at the ring, &c. which are their chief diversions. The hostages also informed them, that during the treaty, eighty thousand dollars of the king's money was sent out of the town, besides their plate, jewels, and other things of greatest value; but they were robbed of a great deal by the Blacks, whom they had

had entrusted in the hurry. The English took several of them with stolen goods as they went their rounds by night, and therefore they made a signal to the inhabitants to return, as they marched off, that they might not suffer any more loss by those villains.

The French, by their commerce in these seas, as the Spaniards in general told them, damage their trade so much that their sea-ports are sensibly impoverished, and this town was much richer six years ago than now.

A mile below the town captain Rogers took his leave of the barks, with the pinnace double manned, designing to get before them to the ships at Point Arena. The day came on very hot, and they saw many alligators in the river.

April the 28th they reached Puna, and met Mr. Duck and Mr. Hatley in the Beginning; and an empty bark which they had taken, the Spaniards having run a-shore and left her at anchor off Point Arena. The people who had been left behind began to be concerned at the delay of their companions, who had sent them no news, and the scarcity of water had made them give the prisoners but a pint a day for some time past; they had also been forced to sink a small prize they had taken coming from Payta to prevent the prisoners running away with her, not having hands enough to spare for manning her.

By day-light captain Rogers got a-board, where he found all the people overjoyed at his return again, after twelve days absence on an undertaking subject to so many fatal accidents, all which he had happily surmounted. Cook and Frye had been, during that time, very uneasy. They had usually given the prisoners liberty by day, but kept their arms always ready, and the after-part of the ships to themselves. At night they shut them up in the fore-castle,

castle, or between decks; but a-board the prize, which was not so secure, they put them in irons every evening, and let them out in the morning, but never suffered any correspondence between the prisoners in the several ships, by which means they neither knew their own strength nor the weakness of their masters, any further than in the respective ships.

Roger Booth, one of the Dutchess's men, who had been shot thro' his windpipe, died the 20th instant: William Essex, a stout sailor, died the 24th, so that out of both ships four good men were lost in this expedition. Mr. James Stratton, a quarter-master belonging to the Dutchess, that was wounded by a musket-ball in the thigh, was now out of danger. The wounded in those parts are more frequently attended with fevers, and other dangerous accidents, than in Europe. April the 29th captain Cooke dispatched the Havre de Grace's boat, well manned, in pursuit of a vessel that came in sight about three in the afternoon, which immediately surrendered upon being hailed, and proved to be a bark of about thirty tons burthen, with six men on board beside the master. She was laden with beans, pease, quinces, marmalade, sugar, plumbs, apples, onions, pomegranates, Guaiquil cheese, two hundred and seventy sacks of flour, two hundred sugar-loaves, and some dried beef. They had been out seven days from Pulania, where they had left some stout French ships, and where orders had lately been received from Lima, warning the magistracy to keep a good look-out as an English squadron was soon expected in those seas, but against what particular place they bent their designs was not yet discovered. From this intelligence it appeared that the arrival of the concert ships in these seas was not yet generally known.

From

From this time to the second of May they impatiently expected the stipulated ransom from Guaiquil, but as yet to no purpose; so that they began now to think the corregidore meant to disappoint and delay them till succours should arrive from Lima; while the hostages repined at their fate, hardly hoping any other destination than that of being carried captives to England: however they were in some measure relieved from these uneasy reflections about evening, by the arrival of a boat from the town with twenty-two thousand pieces of eight, in part payment of the ransom; which boat they immediately returned with a message to the corregidore, acquainting him that they intended to sail the following day; and, that if care was not taken to send the remainder of the money before their departure, they would carry the hostages away with them. In a short time after captain Courtney took charge of the Havre de Grace, and fell therewith down to the Punta Arena, whither captain Rogers agreed to follow him the next morning, waiting only to take on board some sheep, hogs, black cattle, with plantains, cocoas, water, sails, and some other useful commodities which still remained on shore. Before his departure he set the lieutenant-governor of Puna a-shore, having made him a present of four sick negroes and a damaged bail of goods: captain Rogers also behaved extremely well to several other prisoners, particularly to a hearty old priest, whom he here set at liberty.

On the 5th in the morning, captain Rogers went on board the Havre de Grace, and, with the assistance of Mr. Morel and a skilful Indian pilot, brought her off from the edge of a shoal, where she was threatened with some danger, but happily there was little or no wind abroad. Captain Courtney now began to manifest great uneasiness that the concert ships should delay so long here, affirming, tho' there

there was no foundation for the supposition, that they would fall a prey to the armament preparing certainly against them at Lima, and insisted therefore that they should immediately hoist sail and quit this station ; in which proposition he was seconded by the majority of officers, notwithstanding it was plain that they might reap great advantages from trading with the people of Guiaquil and Puna, who began now to be in some measure reconciled to them, as appeared on the morning of the 8th, when, with a boat that brought three thousand five hundred pieces of eight in plate towards the ransom, there came a gentleman who brought with him some goods on purpose to traffic, and assured them that Don Pedro de Sinfuegos, who had been their prisoner and was worth money, with many more of the inhabitants, were preparing to follow his example. However, captain Courtney carried his point, and the majority of voices being for steering towards the Gallapago Islands, they set sail the next morning, taking with them the hostages, the two Morels, the Indian pilots, and a young gentleman belonging to Panama ; all the other prisoners were set a-shore, and captain Rogers got again on board his own ship the Duke, as did Courtney on board the Dutchess.

On the 11th of May, on board the Duke, above twenty men fell sick of a malignant fever, and near fifty on board the Dutchess, among whom was the captain himself, and the number of diseased on board both ships hourly encreased. This disorder had certainly been contracted at Guiaquil, where a few weeks before the arrival of the concert ships, multitudes of people had been swept away by a contagion, from the effects of which the air had yet been scarcely purged. May the 17th land was discovered to the south south-west, bearing about ten leagues distant ; and on the 18th they appeared to be several

islands, whither, having first agreed on a particular rendezvous in case of separation, the boat was sent ashore to look for water, of which they had but a scanty allowance; however, she returned from two different trips without success, reporting the soil to be rotten and heavy, like cinders, giving way under the foot at every step, and so very parched, that it appeared as if it had never felt the refreshment of a shower or a spring; whence, tho' it was not destitute of some shrubs and verdure, Rogers infers it to have been the seat of a volcano.

On the 21st, the Duchess distributed a large quantity of turtle and other fish, which she had just caught, among the sick of both ships, which proved very serviceable, as most of their fresh provisions were exhausted; and what encreased their present calamitous condition, was, that, very unexpectedly, medicines began to run short, altho' they had thought themselves sufficiently stocked therewith, and the sick dropped off fast, without the disorder's seeming to abate; but in the course of it, we ought to observe, that those only were infected who had been ashore at Guiaquil, the rest preserving themselves in good spirits, to which a plentiful distribution of punch, ordered by captain Rogers, who held up pretty well, contributed very much.

On the 22d, Mr. Hatley, with five men on board one of the prize barks, together with a galeon, another of the prize ships, were missing; nor was there any sign of their returning, tho' lights were kept all night at the top-mast head of the Duke and Duchess, and guns incessantly fired; whereupon captain Rogers went in search of them with the Duke, the Havre de Grace, and the bark, and came up with the galeon in a few hours, near the

east

east island, but could gain no intelligence of poor Mr. Hatley, whom they gave up for lost.

On the 26th, it was agreed in a council of the officers to stand over for the main, in order to take in water, which none of these islands had been hitherto able to afford; and on the 6th of June, one of the sailors overheard a discourse between some of the black and Indian prisoners, tending to lay a scheme for murdering all the English sailors, and running away with the ship; however, on being charged with it they denied the design, acknowledging indeed they had had some talk of that sort, wherein there was nothing seriously meant; and to prevent any fatal consequences, captain Rogers dispersed and divided them among the other ships, as the best way to break their cabals.

The same day, a ship of ninety tons burthen, struck to the Ducheſs, after a short chace; ſhe was called the St. Thomas de Villa Nova, and St. Demas, Juan Navarro Navaret commander, and bound from Panama to Guiaquil; there were about forty people on board, including Don Juan Cardoſo, who was going to Baldivia, of which place he was governor, and eleven negroe ſlaves: the priſoners knew nothing of the concert ſhips being in thoſe ſeas, but were alarmed, as were alſo many of the inhabitants of the Spaniſh colonies, with a report that lord Peterborough, with a formidable fleet under his command, would ſoon make a hoſtile appearance in this part of the world.

CHAP. IX.

The ships anchor at the island of Gorgona; a design projected of attacking the mines of Barbacore, but laid aside; they careen at the island of Gorgona; the Havre de Grace fitted up as a twenty gun ship; Messrs. Morel and the other prisoners set at liberty; they traffic for prize goods; venomous serpents found upon the coast; a large quantity of reliëts and papal bulls found on board the prizes; an account of a miracle; new regulations made in regard of plunder; a designed mutiny on board the Duke discovered and prevented.

JUNE the 7th, about four o'clock in the afternoon, they dropped anchor in thirty fathom water, about a cable's length from the shore, on the east side of the island of Gorgona: and the day following the boats of the Duke and Duchefs seized a bark which was watering to the southward; she was called the Golden Sun, burthen thirty-five tons, Andros Euriques master, with ten Spaniards and Indians, a few negroes, and some gold dust, and a gold chain of about five hundred pounds value, wherewith they intended to have purchased salt and brandy at Guiaquil, whither they were bound, from a creek within this island to which the vessel belonged. In the evening, a council of all the officers, captain Rogers excepted, he being indisposed, was held on board the Duchefs, wherein, after the prisoners had been examined, it was resolved from their accounts of its situation and conveniencies, to steer for the island of Malaga, where, leaving the ships in a safe road, they were to row up the river in their boats, till they could surprise

surprise some canoes, as better adapted to stem the tides of the river, and in these they were to proceed to the gold mines of Barbacore, or St. Juan, where they might be certain of a considerable booty, as the Spaniards in that quarter had not the smallest intimation of an enemy's being so near. As captain Rogers had before agreed to consent to whatever they should resolve, about twelve of the same night they hoisted sail for Malaga; but Rogers, upon receiving the report of their deliberations, took upon him to discourse with Mr. Morrell, and some other prisoners, of whose knowledge he was well satisfied concerning the place of their destination; and from these he learned, that whoever had advised the council to such measures as they were now intent on pursuing, either meant to betray them to ruin, or else were very ignorant in those affairs with which they pretended to be well acquainted; for the island of Malaga was not only barren and unfrequented, but the road extremely narrow and full of shoals, with a tide so very strong, that if the ship got over, which she could only do at spring tides, she ran a chance of being forced from her birth and run ashore. Besides, they assured him that the banks of the river were well inhabited all the way up to St. Juan, by a race of people strongly attached to the Spaniards, who would take every measure they possibly could to annoy an enemy, which they might do with ease and safety, with their poisoned arrows, from the covert of the woods; moreover, the channel was so narrow, that by felling trees across it, they might effectually bar the retreat of the invaders, and cut them all off. This information made a strong impression upon captain Rogers; he shuddered at the danger into which his coadjutors were inconsiderately running, and immediately sent for captain Courtney and captain Cook,

to whom the truth of his remonstrances appeared so very plain, that they immediately changed their course, and bore away for Gorgona, where they determined to careen, and to fit up the Havre de Grace as a twenty gun ship, manned out of the Duke and Duchess, to act as a third concert with them, under the command of captain Cook.

June the 13th, they came to anchor near the shore of the island, in forty fathom water, and after having held a committee, in which they filled up two vacancies caused by death; the Duchess was appointed to careen, and the Duke to lie on guard, for fear of being surpris'd by the enemy. As soon as she was turned out, the Duke was careened in turn; and in about fourteen days they were once again in prime order for sea, to the great surprise of the Spanish prisoners, who declared, that careening one of the king's ships at Lima, where there were all kind of necessaries, and artificers ready to lend assistance, took up generally six weeks. June the 28th, they put all their sick ashore, with two doctors to attend them, in tents built for that purpose; here they recovered pretty fast, altho' the Spaniards had represented this as very unwholesome air. The following day, the Havre de Grace, now called the Marquis, was brought ashore and laid in the sand, in order that her bottom might be cleaned; and as her sails were quite worn out, and her masts and yards rotten, there was a necessity for rigging her quite a-new, the woods on the island affording some trees that served pretty well for masts, excepting that they were a little too heavy.

On the 2d of July they found some Maria-wood, the qualities of which are not very different from those of oak: and this proved very serviceable. Their encampment was a fine picture of industry; for necessity made every sailor apply to some trade

or other, as rope-making, sail-making, block-making, smith's and carpenter's work, &c. &c.

July the 3d, the prize flour, tho' much damaged by rats, was made up in thirty-six casks; and the English bread that was left appeared to be eaten by worms, as hollow as a honeycomb. When the Havre de Grace, otherwise the Marquis, was fitted up, she cut a good figure in the water, and the captains ordered liquor to be distributed among all the men that they might drink success to her, and their owners health. The next thing to be done was to fit out Mr. Selkirk's bark, to carry the prisoners over to the main, they being seventy-two in number, who, had they been dismissed before, might have alarmed the coast.

On the 9th, in a committee held on board the Duke, it was agreed that captain Dover, Mr. Robert Frye, and Mr. William Stratton should have the care of transporting them, with forty-five brave sailors under their command; which resolution was straightway put in practice. The two Moreells, Don Antonio, and Don Juan Cardoso were now dismissed, and at their departure seemed well satisfied with the treatment they had met with; the latter was particularly ready to acknowledge this, as he had been very ill used by a Jamaica privateer, which he had some time before fallen in with, in the North Sea, not far from Porto-bello: this gentleman, the reader may recollect, was bound, when taken, to Baldivia, of which he was governor; he was a lively genteel man, about thirty-five years old, and had been a colonel in the Spanish service. The Moreells promised, provided the concert ships would wait for them, to return in a day or two, with as much money as they could raise towards purchasing such prize goods as remained on hands, which, most of them being only valuable in this quarter, the captains declared they would otherwise, burn

together with the galeon in which they were contained, which was a mere burthen to them, and they had not more than sufficient room on board the three concert ships, for such commodities as were much more necessary. On the 17th, in the morning, the two Morels and some other gentlemen came off in a large canoe, and purchased some goods, at rates so very reasonable, that they intreated they might be permitted to come again with as much more money as they could raise; a request which was not in the least displeasing to the captains, as long as there was no apparent danger of an enemy that could hurt them.

On the 18th, a negroe, who had been bitten by a small speckled snake, died in less than twelve hours, notwithstanding the doctor exerted his utmost skill to save him. The island of Gorgona abounds with these species of snakes, some of which are as thick as a man's leg, and three or four yards long; one of them was found and killed the same day upon the fore-castle by the men: it had conveyed itself on board by the help of the cable. They are of an amphibious nature.

In rummaging the Marquis on the 19th, there were found on board her five hundred reams of pope's bulls, which being a free gift from his holiness to his catholic majesty, produce a considerable revenue in the West Indies; being sold from three reals to fifty pieces of eight each, according to the circumstance of the purchaser, who is thereby excused from fasting on some particular days, from hearing mass, or from some other ecclesiastical injunctions, which to neglect would otherwise have been deemed mortal sins; the ransom of these had been of some value, if the bishop had not escaped them, but now they threw some of them overboard, and used the remainder as fuel to the fires which they kept under their kettles.

On the 20th a canoe came on board with some money to be disposed of in trade; together with some fowls, limes, and other refreshments, and this was succeeded by another canoe on the following day.

On the 22d, five of the ship's negroes hid themselves in the woods, with a view of deserting to the Spaniards when their masters were departed; but one of them, being retaken the same day, was severely punished. Three more of them were caught on the 24th, being forced by hunger to quit their asylum, and were brought to their old births. On the 25th, the Duke spared thirty-five, and the Duchess twenty-six hands, being sixty-one white men, besides twenty negroes, to man the Marquis, captain Edward Cook commander, Mr. Charles Pope second captain; and it was agreed unanimously that her officers should be every way upon a footing with those of the Duke and Duchess, pay and share, &c. all alike. The following night her crew were alarmed, by her having sprung a leak, which made eight inches water in an hour; but the carpenter soon found and stopped it. On the 27th the canoes returned with Mr. John Morell, who said his brother would come on board the following day, with as much money as he could possibly raise to traffic; and it now was plain, that they had held off so long, hoping the cruizers would have parted the goods for little or nothing, as they could not carry them to any other market, but finding themselves deceived, they were determined to make the best bargains they could, being firmly persuaded they would never have another opportunity of purchasing goods at so easy a rate.

July the 27th, Mr. Morell, together with his brother, came on board again with what money he could get; he told the captains, that the country being much alarmed, he had much ado to get leave

to come to them; that the governor of Barbacore was at the water-side, at the head of more than two hundred men, as well to prevent them from being traded with, as to hinder their landing; and that all the shore was lined with men assembled for that end. The cruizers had taken out of the galeon three hundred and twenty bales of linen, woolen, silks, &c. besides boxes of knives, scissars, hatchets, &c. They found aboard her a great quantity of bones in small boxes, ticketed with the names of saints, some of which had been dead seven or eight hundred years; with an infinite number of brass medals, crosses, beads, and crucifixes, religious toys in wax, images of saints made of all sorts of wood, stone, and other materials, to the amount of thirty tons, with one hundred and fifty boxes of books, in Spanish, Latin, &c. all which things had been brought from Italy, and were designed for the jesuits of Peru; but being of small value to the English sailors, they contented themselves with taking a sample of most sorts to shew their friends in England, and left the rest.

A large wooden effigy of the Virgin Mary, being either dropped or thrown over board, and chancing to drive towards the north point of the island, some Indians from the main land who were then fishing on the coast, took it up and brought it to the shore, just over against their ship, where setting it up with great seeming devotion, they wiped it dry with cotton, and when they came on board told the ship's crew, that tho' they had wiped it again and again, it continued to sweat very much, while such of these poor people as were not employed in wiping it, stood around devoutly amazed, praying and telling over their beads. They also shewed the cotton to the linguist, which was wet by the excessive sweat of the
holy

holy Virgin, as they fondly seemed to believe, and kept it as a choice relict.

The Morells perceiving that captain Rogers laughed at this story, told him a much stranger, in order to convince him of the truth of this, which was, That a few years before, at a procession in the cathedral church of Lima, which was at that time very richly furnished, and worth some millions of pieces of eight in gold, silver, and jewels. The image of the Virgin was most sumptuously adorned with pearls, diamonds, &c. And those ornaments being left in the church, according to custom, till the night after the procession, without any guard, the people concluding that none durst be so sacrilegious as to dare attempt robbing the church. An unfortunate thief resolving to enrich himself by one bold action, broke into the church at midnight, and made up to the image; but whilst he was going to take off a rich string of pearls from the Virgin's wrists, she caught him fast by the arm, and held him, till being found in that posture, he was apprehended and executed.

This story was confirmed as an unquestionable truth by all the other prisoners, who affirmed that all the fathers of the church at Lima, as well as many of the laity, that saw the thief in the Virgin's custody, were ready to attest the truth of the story.

On the 29th, a committee for the regulation of plunder was held on board the Duke, wherein it was agreed, " That loose jewels, all kinds of womens trinkets, gold-rings, excepting such as might be found in goldsmiths shops, should be deemed plunder; as also all sorts of ship-plate, and ready-made clothes; besides which, to Mr. James Stratton, in part amends for his smart-money, was allowed forty rupees; to William Da-

vis and Derrick Derrickson were given twenty rupees each, a rupee being of about half a crown value; to the boat's crew that engaged the Marquis when taken, one bale of serges, one of linen, and two of bays, to be by them sold where they should think proper; and to each of the men who went up the river last, beyond Guiaquil, in the Duchefs's pinnace a suit of clothes, over and above their respective shares."

These rewards were distributed by way of encouraging the men to behave gallantly for the future: notwithstanding which generosity of the commanders, a dangerous mutiny was set on foot a few days after, which might have proved of the worst consequence, had it not been discovered by the steward of the Duchefs, who chanced to overhear the ringleaders holding a council upon the manner in which they were to proceed: above sixty of them had bound themselves in certain articles, which they had respectively signed, to stand by one another till they had obtained justice, as they termed it, in regard of the plunder, which they imagined unfairly distributed.

At first, four of the principal contrivers of this destructive scheme, among whom was the transcriber of the articles, were taken into custody, and laid in irons: however, they were soon after set at liberty upon their expressing some contrition for their crime, asking pardon, and promising to behave better for the future. The captains thought mildness the best measure, as circumstances then appeared, for to have proceeded rigorously against a few, when so many were concerned, might have been attended with the worst consequences. Every thing seemed to move once again in its proper sphere, and the men unanimous in the common interest, after being harangued by captain Rogers, who assured them that they should be satisfied to the

the

the utmost in every legal demand whatsoever; promised them an encrease of their respective shares of plunder; and concluded with pathetically remonstrating to them the danger of encouraging such conspiracies as this that had been so lately premeditated.

C H A P. X.

Messrs. Navarre and Morell are restored to their respective ships; civility of the privateer's people to the fair sex; the island Gorgona described; the ship sets sail for Tecumes; their proceedings while in that bay; Mr. Navarre takes leave of them; Tecumes described; a character of the natives; description of the Tres Maria islands; the natural civility of the natives of California; one of the Manila ships taken, another escapes; the Guiaquil hostages set at liberty; captain Dover appointed captain of the prize; opposed by captain Rogers.

AUGUST the 6th, in a council of the principal officers of the three ships held on board the *Duchess*, they bound themselves by oath, never to quit company while there was a possibility of their keeping together; and it was also at the same time proposed, that every man should swear that he did not conceal, neither would he hereafter conceal any plunder whatsoever which he could not claim as his own, under a penalty of twenty shillings, to be paid for every shilling's worth so concealed; but this was objected to by many of the hands, and therefore postponed for the present.

On the 7th, it was agreed to give up to Messrs. Morell and Navarre their respective ships, with some negroes, and such of the goods as were not
imme-

immediately vendible; and this was accordingly done directly. Some ladies, who were on board Navarre's ships, and about whom there had been found a good booty, acknowledged at their departure, the great civilities they had received during their being detained; and certainly, good usage to the fair sex, especially if they are young and handsome, is a great virtue in a privateer's crew.

Gorgona is three leagues in length, north-east and south-west, but narrow. It is about six leagues from the main, full of wood and tall trees, one of which is called Palma Maria, fit enough for masts, and from which a balsam issues, that is efficacious in several disorders. The island appears at a distance indifferently high, divided into three little hills. There is riding for ships all along the north side of it, but in some places foul ground, and shoals near the shore, particularly on the south-east side, and near the south-west end, where there is a small island almost joining to Gorgona, with shoal ground. The Spaniards mention strange storms and heavy turnadoes of wind as happening about this island; but captain Rogers found it otherwise, meeting only some few showers, and now and then thunder; but from spring till the beginning of May there are frequent strong breezes from the northward.

About this island are several remarkable rocks, as one to the south-west, that looks like a sail, if viewed half a mile off shore. At the north-east end there are several high ones, round and steep, near a cable's length off shore, where plenty of sea-fowls breed.

The beasts and insects in this island are monkeys, Guinea-pigs, hares, lizzards, and lion-lizzards, the latter, cameleon-like, change their colours, and are fine creatures to look at. Here are also several species

species of snakes, of all sizes, and those in such plenty, that walking is not very safe.

There is great variety of plants and trees growing here, most of them peculiar to the hot climates, and scarcely known in Great Britain. Here are several sorts of fish not to be found in our seas; besides mullets in great plenty, but hard to be caught with hooks and lines, which is occasioned by the clearness of the water; so that they easily see the hook, and avoid it. Here is also some white coral, and abundance of oysters, whence good pearls are very often taken.

Some of the Duke's people caught here an ugly creature, of the middle sized monkey-kind, the hair of it thick and long, the eyes, nose, and features little, the face more wrinkled and deformed than that of a monkey, the ears not so large, the teeth long and sharp, the hinder parts clumsy, and the body thicker in proportion, with a very short tail, and instead of five claws like fingers, as a monkey has, this animal had only three on each paw, with the claws longer and sharper. One of them was allowed to climb up one of the mizen shrouds, and it was two hours in getting to the mast-head, a task which a monkey would have performed in less than half a minute. It walked a slow and equal pace, as if all its movements had been directed by clock-work. The Spaniards call it, not impropely, a sloth; they say it feeds on the leaves of a certain lofty tree, and when it has cleared all about it, before it can get down, and reach another; it grows lean and becomes almost starved.

Our navigator saw few land-birds here, the monkeys being great destroyers of their eggs. Of the last mentioned species many were shot, and of them were made fricassees and broth for the sick; but none of the officers would taste them, provisions

not being yet so scarce, captain Dampier indeed, who had been accustomed to such food, said he never eat any thing in London, that seemed more delicious to him than a monkey or baboon in these parts.

August the 10th captain Rogers proposed sending the Marquis to Brazile, to sell her cargo of prize goods, and to procure an additional stock of fresh provisions, while the Duke and Duchefs, which he supposed sufficiently strong for that purpose, should continue in the present latitude, in expectation of the Manila ship; but this proposition was rejected, tho' it was evident that acceding thereto must have been attended with many advantages, for the Marquis, tho' lightened considerably by having thrown over-board two heavy guns, twenty boxes of snuff, and some other lumbering goods, sailed very heavily: and it being captain Rogers's opinion that she would rather retard than assist their designs, he would willingly have parted both with her and the bark, and it appeared afterwards that he was right, tho' for the present the majority was against him.

August the 12th they found themselves thirteen leagues distant from Gorgona, that island bearing from them south and by east; on the 18th the Duchefs took a vessel bound from Panama to Lima: she was about 70 tons, and had nothing valuable on board but twenty-four negroes; from the crew of this prize they learned that the whole coast was now alarmed with their being in those seas; and that the inhabitants were in the greatest apprehensions imaginable, having dreaded a visit from them ever since the taking of Guiaquil.

August the 25th the two barks were ordered first into the bay of Tecames, and the concert ships came to anchor near them in a few hours; it was here Sir Francis Drake took the very valuable plate prize in 1578; and here also in 1594, Sir Richard

Hawkins

Hawkins was made prisoner by the Spaniards. Mr. White, the linguist, having ventured ashore with some sailors, without orders, had like to have paid for his disobedience, for the Indians attacked them from an ambuscade with fire-arms, bows, arrows, and lances; and they were obliged for their preservation from destruction to the shade of night and the shelter of a wood: however they came to an agreement the following day, thro' the mediation of a friar taken in the last prize; and the Indians having accepted of a present of three images of saints, and a feathered cap, intended as a present to the wife of their chief, they washed off the red paint wherewith they were daubed, and which, when worn by them, denotes their intentions to be hostile, sending several bows and arrows as a gift, in return to captain Rogers.

They now behaved very quietly, pointing out to the boat's crew that went in search of water, where the freshest was to be had; and not scrupling to come on board and view the ship; one of them particularly, who was quite naked, was so charmed with the sight, that he was scarcely to be persuaded out of the great cabin, in which he stretched himself, and lay a long while as if indulging in the ease it afforded; however at last he was content to depart, and seemed vastly satisfied with a good draught of brandy, and a piece of old bayes given him by way of garment. The 26th the boats returned laden with water, and brought a letter from the friar, who acted as governor of the village, setting forth, that the inhabitants were ready to exchange all sorts of fresh provisions, as cows, hogs, plantains, &c. for bayes and other goods to be sent ashore for that end; by which means they were soon well stocked with provisions, altho' not sufficient for the whole voyage, they being soon after obliged to bear away for the Gallapagoes, to take in a supply of turtle.

turtle. Before they quitted Tecames, they set the friar, who had acted as their plenipotentiary, ashore, at his own request; giving him, by way of acknowledgment for his good behaviour, a black female slave, of whom he appeared fonder than became his function; they also sent to the friar or priest of the village a male slave, and a piece of bays, in requital for his kindness; and disposed of the useless negroes, four bales of bayes, and one piece of camblet, to Signior Navarre, whom they parted with here, he promising to remit three thousand five hundred pieces of eight in return, to Jamaica, by the way of Porto Bello; on their owners account. They now put all their prisoners into an unrigged bark, leaving them at liberty to run her ashore at high water, and set sail about six in the morning of the 31st, with a fresh gale at south south-west, taking with them only two of the hostages that they had detained on account of the non-payment of the ransom of Guiaquil, and whom they resolved to carry with them to England; there had been three in all, but the least considerable of the three they had put on board the prize, with the other enfranchised prisoners.

The village of Tecames lies close to the water-side, consisting only of seven houses and a church, wherein the buccaneers found nothing valuable; so that it was very probable, that on their approach, the inhabitants, who are very expert in hunting and fishing, had carried off their best things to the woods. The houses are built of split bamboes, covered with palmetoe leaves, and raised upon posts, with hogsties beneath; the ascent to them being by notched pieces of wood, placed a-slant, which serve instead of stairs; there is a larger village, the residence of the reverend father whom we have before mentioned, about four leagues up the country, nor the intermediate space is not without people; there are two or three contiguous rivers, which here discharge

charge themselves into the sea. About midnight a land breeze commonly springs up here at south and south and by east, which dies away about noon; and in the afternoon the sea breeze comes on and reigns till midnight at west and west-south-west. The weather is generally dry here from June to December, and from January to May they have light showers to the northward.

The Indians are barbarous and resolute, using poisoned arrows and fire-arms in their engagements: they are best at bush-fighting; there is no dealing with them by force, and whoever is necessitated to touch upon this coast, must endeavour to make friends of them by gentle means.

September the 8th the three concert ships made the Gallapago islands, where they continued taking in turtle and salt, of both which here are great plenty, till the morning of the 17th: there is but one of these islands, which the Spaniards reckon fifty in number, that yields fresh water; they abound with sea and land-birds, among the latter are hawks, and turtle-doves so tame that they suffer themselves to be knocked down with a stick; here are also seals so very fierce that they will attack any man who chances to fall in their way, as captain Rogers experienced, who found it very hard to drive off one of them that made at him with all the rage of an incensed mastiff, and which he wounded in three places with a pike that he held in his hand, before it would quit him; while they staid upon this island, seven of their negroes, out of ten that were sent ashore to cut firing, deserted into the woods.

On the 2d of October the land of Mexico bearing north-east at about ten leagues distance, some of the men began to grow faint and sickly; however they were recovered by bleeding; their disorder certainly arose from their scanty allowance of bread, it being but one pound and a quarter per day among five men,

men, and their principal food otherwise being turtle, which, tho' as fresh provision it is a preservative against the scurvy, cannot be deemed a strengthener. October the 4th they came up with the Tres Marias islands, where they remained till the 24th to cut wood and take in water and turtle; tho' it was not without difficulty they found a stream that was wholesome, all springs which they met, two excepted, from which they supplied themselves, being not only bitter, but strong purgatives, occasioned by some neighbouring mineral or bitter roots. These islands lie in latitude twenty degrees forty-five minutes, or thereabouts, the largest of them appearing to be about five leagues long, the middlemost about three, and the smallest not quite two leagues from end to end; they afford plenty of pigeons, doves, parrots, and other species of birds, with some excellent hares, guanoes, and racoons, which are boldly ill-natured and snarl like dogs. It was during the stay of the concert ships at these islands that captain Thomas Doyer, by consent of a committee, quitted the Duke for the Duchefs; here also a resolution was taken of cruising off cape St. Lucas, the most southern point of California, in hope to fall in with the Manila or Acapulco ship. On the 30th a negroe woman on board the Duke was delivered of a girl, by Mr. Wasse the chief surgeon, in a close cabin provided for that purpose. Captain Rogers, in his account of this voyage, takes care to warn the reader from accusing the crew of lewdness, or an indulgence of libidinous desires, which he fears they will otherwise be too apt to do, after a retrospect of this circumstance; he assures us that this woman had not been among them above six months; that another negroe wench on board, called Daphne, was severely threatened in case she should be found unchaste; and that one on board the Duchefs was whipped at the capstern for a love-slip. These females had, it seems,

seems, a smattering of English, and supplied the place of cooks, laundresses, and sempstresses.

November the 1st, being in latitude twenty-two degrees fifty-five minutes, they discovered the land of California bearing about eight leagues distant west and by north; here very strict orders were made against gaming; on the 17th some Indians were discovered at a distance on a bark-log, as it were viewing the ship, which they seemed fearful of approaching, but were at length prevailed upon by a present of a knife and some bays, for which they returned some deer skins, two live foxes, and a couple of bladders of water; they were quite naked, and entirely unacquainted with the Spanish tongue, whence it was plain they had no communication with the Spaniards, and appeared to be strangers to the European manner of trafficking. Some of the ship's crew ventured ashore on the 19th on bark-logs, for the sea was too high for them to attempt landing out of boats; the natives in a very good-natured manner assisting them as much as in their power lay, wiping the water from their faces with their hands.

This ceremony being ended, each of the sailors, supported by two of these savages, was led thro' a narrow path, of about a quarter of a mile's extent, to their huts, where their welcome was played upon a most uncouth instrument, being only two jagged sticks, accompanied by a voice still more wretched, wild, and barbarous. Here they were entertained with broiled fish, and presented with knives made of shark's teeth, and several other little curiosities; these poor savages seeming as if willing to share every thing with them, except their women and children, of which they were too fond to permit strangers to partake, tho' this participation in some parts of the world is esteemed an honour. The

21st the boat was sent ashore with a musician ; but captain Rogers does not inform us what effect harmonious sounds had upon these rough, uncivilized people ; he says that the boat did not return till the day following, when she brought an account of a very safe bay not far distant, with a good river of fresh water falling into it, and huts near it for five hundred or more Indians, who could supply the ships with nothing but fish ; this bay our author supposes to be the place wherein Sir Thomas Cavendish recruited, anno 1588.

On the 27th the Indians began to grow more shy, and to keep a greater distance with the sailors, as if they feared the buccaneers staying so long among them manifested a greater liking to the land than they would have probably consented to let them indulge. November the 28th two men were punished for stealing the key of the store-room from the steward as he lay asleep, and filching thence some sugar and bread : this crime was at this time the more unpardonable, as their stock of bread ran so very short ; nor did there seem any way of improving it till their arrival at Guam, for which island they intended to steer, when they should quit California.

They all now began to despair of meeting with the Manila ship this year, a month being elapsed since the common time in which she was wont to pass this way : but to the general joy she was discovered on the 21st of December ; and on the 22d, she struck to the Duke, after a short engagement, wherein she lost nine men, and had many more wounded ; the only damage the Duke sustained, was, that captain Cooke was shot in the cheek, whereby his jaw was broke, and one sailor, a Welchman, was slightly bruized. This ship was commanded by Sir John Pichberty, a gallant Frenchman, to whom the buccaneers in a few days after gave his liberty, together with

with the bark laden with prize goods, for which they accepted his bills upon London for six thousand dollars. On board this vessel the two Guaiquil hostages were also permitted to embark.

This ship had one hundred and ninety-three men on board; she mounted twenty guns and twenty pateraroes; and came out of port with a much stronger vessel of nine hundred tons, with which the buccaneers came up in some few days after, but were obliged to quit her after a flying fight that continued near two days.

January the 1st, the bark with Pichberty, the hostages, &c. turned out of port Segura, where they then all lay, steering for Acapulco, being supplied with a sufficient stock of provisions and water: and captain Pichberty, together with his officers and chaplain, having all their books, clothes, and instruments restored to them; a piece of civility by them gratefully acknowledged.

In a day or two after, captain Dover was by a majority of officers, in a full committee appointed commander of the prize, which was named the Batchelor frigate; and against this nomination, Woods Rogers, who had but an indifferent opinion of captain Dover, when considered in the light of a naval officer, entered a solemn protest, which was also subscribed to by the Duke's principal officers; whereupon, to prevent the disorders that might ensue from heart-burnings and the encouragement of disputes among each other; a new committee assembled, wherein it was resolved that captain Dover should continue on board the prize, with the title of chief captain, but without any power in regard to sailing, engaging, or other affairs immediately respecting the ship, the care of which business, devolved equally upon Mr. Stratton and Mr. Frye; wherewith Rogers and his people were well satisfied, and unanimity was again restored.

It was next agreed, as their business in those seas was now pretty well over, and they should think of returning to Europe, that in case of a separation, the place of rendezvous should be at Guam, one of the Ladrões.

January the 11th, they weighed from port Segura, intending for Guam, having but a slender stock of provisions and liquors, the most of which they had got on board the Batchelor frigate; and the daily allowance among five men, reckoning twenty-four hours in the day, was a pound and a half of flour and a small piece of meat, with three pints of water each to drink, and to serve for dressing victuals also. And now, good reader, while they are upon this voyage, it may not perhaps be disagreeable to you, should we step back a little, and take a view of California, Mexico, and some other countries, along the coasts of which we have for some time accompanied the concert ships.

CHAP. XI.

A description of California.

IT is not yet certainly known whether California be an island, or joins to the continent. Some of the Spaniards sailed as far up betwixt California and the main, as latitude forty-two north, where meeting with shoal water, and abundance of islands, they durst not venture any further. In all probability, it joins to the continent a little further to the northward; for shoal water and islands is a general sign of the contiguity of main land. But the Spaniards having more territories in this part of the world than they know how to manage, they are indolent in pursuit of further discoveries.

Some

Some old draughts join California to the land of Jesso. The Dutch say they formerly took a Spanish vessel in those seas, which had sailed round California, and found it to be an island; but this story cannot be depended on. There is no certain account of its shape or bigness. The land is for the most part mountainous, barren, and sandy, producing nothing but a few shrubs and bushes, which afford some fruit; and berries of several sorts. The country about fifteen leagues to the north, is covered with tall trees. The Spaniards talk of several good harbours in this country, but the English have not found them; from the quantity of smoak arising in different parts, one may judge that the inhabitants are very numerous. Anchoring ground, in the deep water of the bay is very indifferent: upon the whole, it is a very bad recruiting place. The buccaneers, during their stay here, found the air serene, pleasant, and healthy, with light gales of wind, little rain, heavy dews, and the nights rather cool than otherwise.

The natives, of which they saw about three hundred, were strait and tall, with large limbs, and of a much blacker complexion than any other people in the South-Seas. Their hair long, black, and strait, hung down to their thighs. The men were stark naked, and the women had a covering of leaves over their privities, or little clouts made of silk grass, or the skins of birds and beasts. Both sexes appeared to be miserably old and wrinkled: it is supposed they were afraid to let any of their young ones come in sight; but if a judgment may be formed from the sample, this was a needless apprehension, for they could have offered but little temptation.

The language of the natives being harsh, broad, and guttural, was as grating upon the ear as their

aspect was disagreeable to the eye. The captain was once inclined to have taken two of these people away with him, in order to have some account of the country, when they had learned English enough to enable them to give it; but being short of provisions, he durst not venture it.

Some of them wear bracelets of pearl, red berries, bits of stick and shells fastened on silk grass about their arms and legs; and these trinkets they preferred to the gaudy glass beads presented them by the sailors, which they rejected, as if sensible of their intrinsic value. They coveted nothing but knives, and other cutting instruments, and were so honest, that they did not meddle with the carpenters or coopers tools; so that whatever was left ashore at night, was found untouched in the morning.

They had nothing like European furniture or utensils among them. Their huts were low, and made of branches of trees and reeds, but not sufficiently covered to keep out rain. They had nothing like gardens about them. They subsisted chiefly on fish; from which circumstance and the wretchedness of their huts, which seemed only made for a time, the English concluded they had no fixed habitation. They have no nets or hooks for fishing, but wooden instruments, with which they strike the fish very dextrously, and they dive to admiration. Some of the sailors told captain Rogers they had seen one of them dive with his instrument, and whilst he was under water, put up his striker with a fish on the point of it, which was taken off by another of the savages that hovered over him on a bark-log. The captain threw some rusty knives overboard on purpose to try those divers, who seldom missed catching a knife before it could sink above three or four fathom; an extraordinary proof of their agility.

Instead

Instead of bread, they used a little black seed, in taste not unlike coffee, which they ground with stones, and eat it by handfuls. They have some roots like yams; a sort of seeds that grow in cods and taste like green pease; and a berry resembling those of ivy, which being dried at the fire, eat like parched pease. They have another berry which they value greatly, it is like a large currant, white and tart, with a pulp, a stone and a kernel enclosed. They have a fruit which grows on a tree like the prickly pear-tree, it tastes like a gooseberry, and is an agreeable sauce; with many other seeds and plants unknown to us.

They seem to have a season of hunting, by the skins of deer, &c. They paid a sort of particular respect to one man, whose head was adorned with feathers, made up in the form of a cap; otherwise all things among them appeared in common. They are lazy and idle, seeming only to look after a present subsistence. They stood and looked upon the sailors whilst they cut wood and filled water, but did not care to lend a hand, or indeed to do any thing that required hard labour.

Their arms are bows and arrows, with which they can shoot birds flying. The bows are about seven foot long, and of a tough pliant wood, with strings of silk grass; their arrows four foot and a half, made of cane, and pointed with fish-bones, artfully shaped for the purpose. Most of their knives and other cutting instruments are made of sharks teeth. They have store of large pearls, which they wear in necklaces and bracelets. The country in general is pleasant and fruitful, abounding with cattle and provisions of all sorts.

The natives grew very familiar with the English, and came frequently aboard to view their ships, which they mightily admired. They have no boats or canoes among them, nor any other sailing craft,

craft, but bark-logs which they steer with paddles. They gave one of the natives a shirt, but he soon tore it in pieces, and gave it to the rest of his company to put the seeds in, which they used for bread. Captain Rogers saw no utensils for cookery about them; for they bury their fish in a heap of sand, and make a fire over it till they think it fit for eating. The fresh water here is very good, and they have abundance of samphire. They make a fire in the middle of their huts, which are very low and smoaky; and this fire they produce by rubbing two dry sticks against each other, as is customary among the wild Indians.

The entrance into the harbour may be known by four high rocks, which look like the Needles at the Isle of Wight, as you come from the westward; the two westernmost are in form of sugar-loaves. The innermost has an arch like a bridge, thro' which the sea makes its way. In the deepest part of the bay, you may anchor from ten to twenty, or twenty-five fathom water.

CHAP. XII.

Mexico described.

MEXICO lies betwixt eight degrees latitude, and fifty or fifty-five north, but it is little known or inhabited by the Spaniards to the northward of thirty-five; it is divided into Old or New Mexico, which in general includes all the west-side of northern America, as far as it is known. It is divided into the audiences, or jurisdictions of St. Domingo, Mexico properly so called, Guadalajara or New Galicia and Guatemala; and these again are subdivided into several provinces, with the appellations of which, we shall not trouble the

the reader. That part of it called New Spain, is the best and most famous part of all north America, and the name of New Spain is sometimes extended by the Spaniards to the whole.

The air in general is mild, temperate, and healthy, and the soil so fertile, that in some places it produces one hundred grains for one ear of corn; but the great rains in summer hinder their having oil and wine.

Their most remarkable plant is that called maguey, which abounds in this country, and some of it grows in the Maria islands; of the juice the Spaniards and natives make a small wine, &c. and of the leaves and other parts they make cordage, thread, and cloth, for sacks and shirts. They have great and small cattle, and fowl in such plenty, that they frequently kill them only for the skins and feathers. They have also excellent horses of the best Spanish breed.

There are few gold mines in this country, but abundance of silver, and tho' not so rich as those of Peru, they are more easily worked.

Their other chief commodities are iron, steel, and copper, hides, wool, cotton, sugar, silk, cochineal, scarlet dye, feathers, honey, wax, balm, ambergrese, salt, abundance of medicinal drugs, coco, cassia, &c. The sands of the rivers sometimes yield gold, and they have plenty of figs, oranges, citrons, and other fruit peculiar to the climate, besides all those common in Europe. In many places they pick up chrystal, turquoises, emeralds, marcasites, bezoar stones, and pepper. This must be understood of Mexico in general, for all those commodities are not in one province, but some have one sort and some another; nor is the temper of the climate every where the same, for those places towards the South-Sea are warm, but in and about the mountains it is cold, and in some

places they have continued rains almost for eight or nine months in the year, and are much infested with serpents, moskettos, and other insects, especially near the torrid zone.

We shall not pretend to give the history of their kings, because it would puzzle the ablest critics to distinguish betwixt truth and falsehood. The Spanish authors say, the kings of Mexico were very potent; that they had twenty-five or thirty petty kings their tributaries; that their ordinary guards usually consisted of two or three thousand men; and that on occasion they could raise two or three hundred thousand; that their palaces were magnificent, their temples sumptuous, and their worship barbarous, it being usual for them to sacrifice their enemies, and sometimes their own subjects.

The natives of Old Mexico say, they are not of that race of people, but that their ancestors came from divers nations, who inhabited the northern parts of the continent, and particularly that called New Mexico. It was a long time before they united into one monarchy; for Montezuma, who reigned when Fernando Cortez invaded them, was only the ninth in their catalogue. The divisions among the natives, and the hatred which the neighbouring princes bore to their kings, made the conquest of Mexico much easier to the Spaniards than they expected; so that in the bishopric of Los Angeles, &c. there are many thousands of Indians exempted from extraordinary taxes, because their ancestors assisted the Spaniards in the conquest of the country.

The natives of Mexico, I mean such as are properly so called, are civilized, industrious, and ingenious; their skill in painting is remarkable, their colouring is very beautiful, but their figures not so well proportioned; they use for brushes feathers of the cinçons, a small bird, which is
said

said to live only upon dew. They make use of certain characters, instead of the letters of the alphabet, by which they have preserved some fragments of their history. One of the Spanish governors of Mexico got it out of the hands of the natives, with an explanation, and had it translated into Spanish. The ship in which it was sent to the emperor Charles the Vth, being taken by a French ship, the manuscript fell into the hands of Andrew Thevet at Paris, from whose heirs, Hackluyt, being then almoner to the English ambassador, purchased it. Sir Walter Raleigh got it translated into English, and the learned Sir Henry Spelman prevailed with Purchas to get the figures engraven. This history is divided into three parts; the first contains little but an account of the names and conquests of their princes, with a summary of their vices and virtues; so that it is not worth insisting upon. The second has an account of the tributes paid by the people, which were proportions of the product of the country for provisions, cloaths, arms, habits, and ornaments, paper, and household furniture. The third gives an account of the œconomy, customs, and discipline of the Mexicans; of which, because they are remarkable, we shall insert a few particulars.

Four days after a child was born, the midwife carried it to the yard of the house, laid it upon rushes, and after washing it, desired three boys, who were there at a sort of feast, to name it how they pleased. If it was a boy, she put into its hand the tools belonging to its father's employment; as, his arms, if a soldier. If it was a girl, a distaff or some other female utensil. If the boy was designed for the church, they carried him at a certain age to the temple, with some presents, and left him with the high priest to be educated; and if he was intended for a military life, they carried

him to an officer to teach him the use of arms. The parents corrected them by blows, or pricking them with needles made of the magney tree. The father pricked the boys, if unlucky, all over their body, and the mother pricked her daughters only in the fists. When boys were pretty well grown, they tyed them hand and foot, and laid them in muddy water naked a whole day, and then their mothers took them out and cleaned them at night. When a maid was to be married, the marriage-maker carried her on his back to the bridegroom's house, four women bearing torches before her; the bridegroom's friends received her in the yard or court, carried her to a room, and set her down by him on a mat, and tyed the skirts of their garments together, offered incense to their idols, and had four old men or women to be witnesses of the ceremony. After a feast, the witnesses exhorted them to live well together, and so the whole was concluded.

The priests trained up their novices in sweeping and ornamenting their temples, making cane seats, forming needles or thorns of magney, to draw blood for sacrifices, or gathering shrubs to keep in the perpetual fire; and if they failed in their duty, they were returned to their parents. If they were caught with women, they were pricked with those needles.

One of the chief priests went every night to a neighbouring mountain, where he did penance, carried fire and perfume to sacrifice to the devil, and was always attended by a novice; others of them played on musical instruments, and some of them counted the hours by an observation of the stars. The chief dignities of the priesthood were attained to by degrees, and some of them always attended the armies to encourage the men and perform their rites. Those who trained the youth to
war,

war, punished their scholars by throwing burning coals on their heads, pricking them with sticks of pine sharpened at one end, or by burning off their hair. Their kings rewarded the soldiers according to the number of prisoners they took, with military habits of several colours, or posts in the army, till they came to the highest. Their chief priests were also men of arms, and capable of all military preferments.

Their capital punishments were strangling or stoning to death. If a cacique or petty prince rebelled, all his subjects shared in his punishment, except they found some method to appease the king. They punished drunkenness in young men by death, but allowed it in old men and women of seventy. Highwaymen and adulterers they stoned to death. They had assemblies for public affairs, wherein the great master of the emperor's or king's household exhorted youth to avoid idleness, gaming, drunkenness, and other vices.

As to the present natives, most of them are subject to the Spaniards, but in some of the mountains and northern parts, they are not reduced; so that they frequently attack the Spaniards when they meet with a favourable opportunity.

In that called New Mexico, some of the natives are very barbarous, and much given to arms; the men wear nothing but skins, and the women scarce any other covering than their hair. They live for the most part on raw flesh, and go together in troops, changing their habitation as the season or conveniency of pasturage require.

Their oxen and cows are large, with small horns, hair almost like wool, long before, and short behind, a bunch on their backs, great beards like goats, and their fore-legs short: they are ugly looking creatures, but very strong; and the principal riches of the natives, who feed upon their

flesh make cloaths and roofs to their huts of their skins, thread of their hair, bow-strings of their nerves, utensils of their bones, and trumpets of their horns; in their bladders drink is kept, and their dung serves for firing, wood being scarce here.

They have sheep as large as our asses, and dogs so strong, that they make them carry their baggage.

This country is inhabited by people of different languages and manners; some of them live in cities, of which it is said there are several that contain from thirty to fifty thousand inhabitants; others wander about in herds like the Arabs or Tartars: but in short, this country is so little known, and travellers differ so much in their relations concerning it, that but few accounts can be relied upon.

There are many opinions about the peopling of America, but the most reasonable is, that it was peopled from Tartary by way of the north pole, where it is supposed to join with some part of Asia. This is very probable, because the Spaniards, who come yearly hither from Manila or Luconia, one of the Philippine islands in the East-Indies, are forced to keep in a high latitude for the benefit of westerly winds, and have often founded, finding ground in latitude forty-two degrees north in several places of the ocean betwixt the East-Indies and America. It is wonderful that no considerable discoveries have yet been made in south latitude from America to the East-Indies. The south ocean has not been run over by above three or four navigators, who varied little in their runs from their course, and by consequence, could not discover much.

The land near the north pole in the South-Sea, from California to Japan, is wholly unknown; al-

tho' the old maps describe the Streights of Anian, and a large continent, it is but imaginary, for the Dutch themselves, that now trade to Japan, say they do not know whether it be an island, or joins to the continent. We shall take up no more of the reader's time with Mexico, as he will find many more entertaining particulars relative thereto by turning back to Gemelli.

Captain Rogers was informed by a man who escaped to him from the Spaniards at Guiaquil, that several Englishmen, who had been at different times made prisoners here, had grown rich, having obtained their freedom by turning Roman catholics: among these was a clock-maker from Dover, his name was Thomas Bull, and he was well settled in Tobasco; captain Thomson, formerly of the Isle of Wight; and one Thomas Falkiner, born in Pall-Mall. No mulattoes, nor of the mixed breed are admitted to any ecclesiastical dignities; the sweets of these are reserved intirely for native Spaniards. Thro' the instruction of some few English, whom either chance or choice had thrown upon this coast, the natives of late had learned to make very fine woollen cloaths, and considerable improvements both in their silk and woollen manufactures. Their mountain-woods consist mostly of pine, and no concert that can be conceived affords a harmony equal to what is heard from the birds that inhabit them; for no nation yields a greater variety of singing birds than Mexico; which terrestrial paradise we shall quit, to take a survey of the neighbouring kingdom of Peru.

CHAP. XIII.

A description of Peru and Chili, &c.

PERU, properly so called, is about a thousand leagues long, but the breadth varies from one hundred to three hundred leagues. The best known part of it lies on the South-Sea, and is divided into three audiences Quito; in the north, Lima in the middle, and La Plata in the south. The air of Quito is temperate, tho' under the line: the soil is fruitful, abounding with cattle and corn, and affording mines of gold, silver, quick-silver, and copper; also emeralds and many species of medicinal drugs. The audience of Lima is most noted, because of its capital of the same name, being the residence of the viceroy of Peru.

This country abounds with mines of gold, silver, quick-silver, vermillion, and salt. The silver mines of Potosi are much decayed, yet it is said the king of Spain receives from them annually two millions of crowns, or four hundred thousand pounds sterling, for his fifth.

The Spanish writers in general say, that for the space of five hundred leagues, reckoning from Tunbez to Chili, it never thunders, lightens, nor rains; but the want of this is supplied by great dews, so that they have as good corn and fruit, and particularly wheat, about Truxillo, as in any part of the world.

In the valleys near the sea, the climate is hot, but tempered with breezes from the ocean and mountains. In the hilly part, far into the country, it is winter and very rainy, when it is summer in the plains; tho' in the same latitude. The products

ducts beasts and birds, are much the same with those of the other parts of the South-Sea coast.

They have their cordage, cotton, cloth, pitch, and tar from Chili and Rio Lezo in Mexico; and tho' the country abounds with provision, it is always dear near the mines, because there husbandry is neglected. The cordage is made of coarse silk grafs, which is very tough, drawing small when strained, but growing twice as big when slacked.

Captain Stradling, who had been formerly a prisoner here, told captain Rogers he saw several of the Spaniards at Lima, who had been prisoners to him, and they all acknowledged that they had been treated very civilly. The gold mines are most of them in the north parts betwixt Panama and the equinoctial line.

Before the French traded to Peru round Cape Horne, there was a considerable commerce from Panama to all the ports of the South-Sea; but since that time, they have had such a glut of European goods, that the trade is scarce worth following. The Spaniards have a great many ships and small vessels belonging to the several ports of Peru, which are chiefly employed in carrying timber, salt, salt-fish, wine, brandy, oil, and other commodities from one part of the coast to another, without which they could not well subsist; for this country is said to be more populous and better inhabited than Mexico. They make woollen cloth of several sorts; captain Rogers saw some made at Quito, worth about eight shillings per yard, sold there for five dollars. The Indians likewise make a coarse sort of cotton cloth, but the French furnish them better and cheaper.

The Spanish settlements in Peru, as well as in Mexico and Chili, are not so full of Indians as formerly; for many of them are gone to remote parts, and live in colonies by themselves, to avoid
slavery

slavery and taxes, for they were obliged to pay from eight to fourteen dollars per head yearly to the king; which tax is now considerably lessened by the removal of so many natives.

The Spaniards in Peru are very profuse in their cloathing and equipage, and affect to wear the most costly things that can be purchased; so that those who trade hither with commodities of this sort, may be sure to have the greatest share of their wealth.

Chili lies nearest to those who shall think fit to attempt a trade from England to the South-Sea. Father Ovalle, a native of Chili, agrees with our maps, in placing it farthest south of any part of America, on that called the South or Pacific Sea. He bounds it with Peru on the north, the Streights of Magellan on the south, Paraguay, and Patagonia on the east, and the South-Sea on the west. He begins it at south latitude twenty-five, and extends it to latitude fifty-nine, which is near five hundred leagues.

The breadth of it varies, and the broadest part from east to west he makes about one hundred and fifty leagues, tho' Chili, properly so called, is not above twenty or thirty leagues broad, from the chain of mountains named Cordillera to the South-Sea: but when the king of Spain divided America into particular governments, he added to Chili the vast plains of Cusco, which are of an equal length with, and twice as broad as Chili itself. The country in general Ovalle places in the third, fourth, and fifth climates; the longest day in the third, is thirteen hours; and in the fifth, above fourteen.

Almagro was the first European who attempted a conquest of this country, but it was never totally subdued till the year 1640. The Spaniards, who have sufficiently experienced the valour of this people,

people, treat them therefore with more civility than they do the rest of the Americans.

The Sanfons say, that Chili, in the language of the country, signifies cold; which is so excessive in the mountains called Sierra Nevada, a part of the Cordillera, that it freezes men and cattle to death, and keeps their corps from putrefaction; so that Almagro lost a great many of his men and horses as he past those mountains, of which march we have given some account in the second volume of this Collection of Voyages, under the article of the Conquest of Peru. The valleys towards the sea are very healthy, the climate temperate, and the soil fruitful, tho' with some difference, as it lies nearer or further from the equator; but the coasts are subject to strong gales of wind.

The country is divided into three quarters, and those three into thirteen jurisdictions. The quarter of Chili proper extends from the river Copiapo to that of Maule, and is hotter than Spain. The second quarter, called Imperial, reaches from the river Maule to that of Gallegos, and much resembles the climate of Spain. The proximity of the mountains on one side, and of the sea on the other, makes it colder than otherwise it would be; but it has warmth enough to make it one of the best countries in America.

Ovalle tells us, that in Chili, properly so called, the soil and climate exceed in goodness those of any part of Europe; and this report is confirmed by the confessions of the Europeans themselves: he says, it is like the greatest part of Europe in every thing except the opposition of the seasons, it being spring and summer in one part, when it is autumn and winter in the other; but in the valleys the heat and cold are not so excessive as in Europe, especially from latitude thirty-six, or thereabouts,

abouts, to latitude forty-five; so that neither the heat of the day, nor the cold of the night can be complained of: from hence it is that the inhabitants make no difference between the summer and the winter in their bedding and cloaths. He adds, that they are not troubled here with lightning, and seldom hear thunder, except at a great distance.

They have no storms of hail in the spring, and seldom above two or three rainy days together in the winter, after which the sky is serene. The north winds bring on clouds and rain, and the south winds clear the sky. They have no poisonous or ravenous creatures, except a small sort of lions, which sometimes prey on their flocks, but always fly from men; nor are these lions numerous, there being only a few of them in the woods and deserts. He observes, as a peculiar property of the air of Chili, that no bugs will live in it, tho' they swarm in Cusco, on the other side of the mountains. From the whole he infers, that there is no country in America so agreeable to European constitutions as Chili, the air and provisions being so like their own. The spring begins about the middle of August, and lasts till the middle of November; the summer holds to the middle of February, the autumn continues to the middle of May, and the winter to the middle of August. During this last season the trees are deprived of their leaves, and the ground is covered with white frosts, which are dissolved about two hours after the sun rises. The snow falls seldom in the valleys, but in great quantities in the mountains, from whence it is melted in the summer, and fructifies the vallies and plains with rivulets. In the spring the fields are adorned with beautiful flowers of all colours and species. From them is distilled a liquid called angels water, which makes a noble perfume. The choicest flowers and
plants

plants that the English cultivate grow wild there; they have groves of mustard-trees higher than a man on horseback, wherein birds build their nests. They have many physical plants and herbs, with which their Indian physicians perform wonderful cures, when the patients are even given over by the European doctors; but they are very shy of communicating those secrets.

Fruits and seeds brought hither from Europe thrive well, but those of Mexico and Peru do not succeed. Here are all sorts of English fruits, in such abundance, that every one may take what they please; so that none is sold, except a sort of extraordinary large strawberries, which are cultivated with some little trouble. They have oats, wheat, and maiz, in such plenty, that they are seldom in want of grain. Their pastures are so rich, and their cattle, of all sorts, so numerous, that they do not value the flesh, but salt the tongues and loins, and send them to Peru with the hides and tallow, which is a great branch of their trade.

They have store of noble and generous wines, both white and red; their vines are larger, and their clusters of grapes much bigger than any in Europe. They have also plenty of olives, groves of coco-trees, extending several leagues; almond-trees, and store of silk-grass, which they use instead of hemp; so that they furnish all the coasts of the South-Sea with cordage for their ships. They have also great quantities of annise and cummin-seed, salt, flax, wool, leather, timber, pitch, amber; and, according to Ovalle, merchants upon the trade from hence to other parts in the South Sea, but especially to Lima, may gain from one hundred to three hundred per cent. profit.

Tho' they have abundance of mulberries, they breed no silk-worms; so that the ladies, who are extravagant in their apparel, impoverish the country

try by purchasing the richest silks, tho' they might easily have enough of their own produce. They have plenty of bees, yet have their wax from Europe, for want of industry to improve their own; and they have pepper and other spice from the East Indies, tho' they have a spice of their own, which might very well supply the place of them. Herbage, fishing, hunting, wood for fuel, and timber, and salt mines are here in common. They make little use of their mines of lead and quicksilver, for Peru has enough of the latter to purify their silver.

Ovalle says the gold mines are so many, that from the confines of Peru to the streights of Magellan, there is no part of the country without them, but they are not so much noticed as in Peru; nor do they apply to working of the silver mines, because those of gold are wrought with less charge. Gold is not dug here in such plenty since the war betwixt the Spaniards and Arancanos; but the natives wait for the winter rains which wash it down from the mountains into rivers, ponds, &c. when they go into the water, feel out the grains with their toes, and soon pick up as much as supplies their present necessities; thus says our author: but it appears to be a very odd way of getting gold. He tells us, that he sent one of those grains to Seville, where being touched, it was found to be twenty-three carats fine without being purified. Most of the bells and great guns used in Peru, are made of the copper of this country.

The Andes or chain of mountains named Cordillera*, he says, run from north to south from the province of Quito to the streights of Magellan, which is above a thousand leagues, and they are accounted the

* Cordillera is the Spanish for any ridge of hills of vast extent, but is particularly applied to the Andes, these mountains running the whole length of South America.

highest mountains in the world ; being generally forty leagues broad, and intermixed with abundance of habitable valleys. These mountains form two ridges ; the lower is covered with woods and groves, but the higher barren, because of the excessive cold and the snow lying thereon. The most remarkable animals in these mountains are, a species of hogs called pecarys, which have their navels on their backs ; these go in great herds, with each their leader, and till he be killed, it is not safe for hunters to close with them, but when he falls they immediately disperse. Wild goats, whose hair is as soft as silk, and much used for fine hats. Sheep shaped like camels, but of a far less size, with wool so fine that it is preferred to silk for softness and colour.

The antient Yncas, or princes, cut two roads thro' these mountains ; and, if we may believe Herrera, one of them was paved for nine hundred leagues, all the way from Cusco to Chili ; it was twenty-five feet broad, and at every four leagues there was a noble structure, and, at each half league, couriers to relieve one another in carrying messages from the state. He says, there are still a sort of inns on this road, where travellers find all necessaries ; but the paths into the mountains are so narrow that a single mule can scarce pass them. The ascent begins at the very sea-shore ; but to reach what are properly called the tops of the mountains, requires three or four days journey. Here the air is so very piercing that it is difficult to breathe. Herrera says, that those who pass them from Peru, are troubled with reachings and vomitings. Ovalle adds, that there are meteors upon those mountains, sometimes so high in the air that they resemble stars ; and at other times so low, that they frighten the mules and buz about their ears and feet. He says, on the top of those mountains they cannot
see

see the country below for clouds, tho' the sky over their heads is clear and bright, and the sun shines strongly.

There are sixteen vulcanos in this chain of mountains, which sometimes break out with dreadful effects, cleaving the rocks and throwing out great quantities of fire with the most horrid noise. It is thought there are many rich mines among those mountains, tho' the natives industriously conceal them, and make it death to discover them, which has defeated several attempts of that nature by the Spaniards.

These mountains are passable only in summer or in the beginning of the winter. There are frightful precipices and deep rivers at the sides of the narrow passes, which frequently occasion the loss both of mules and travellers. The streams run with such violence, and so far below the roads, that to look down must turn a weak head. The ascents and descents are so steep that they are difficult to pass on foot, but the irksomeness of the way is alleviated by the beautiful cascades which the water naturally forms as it falls from the rocks and mountains; and in some of the valleys the water springs up to a great height, like fountains made by art among odoriferous plants and flowers, forming a most delightful prospect. All these streams and springs are so very cool that a man cannot hold his hands in them above a minute. In some places there are hot springs, good against many distempers, which leave a green tincture in the channels thro' which they run. One of these rivers, called Mendoca, has a natural bridge of rock over it, from the vault of which hang several collected drops of water congealed, exhibiting various shapes and colours.

This bridge is broad enough for three or four carts to pass abreast. There is another bridge near this, called Yncas, laid over, as some say, by art betwixt

betwixt two rocks, but our author thinks it is the work of nature.

The first particular river which runs from these mountains is that which rises in the confines of Peru, about twenty-five degrees south latitude. It is called the River of Salt because it is so salt that it cannot be drank, and petrifies whatever is thrown into it. The second is Copiapo, which rises in twenty-six degrees latitude, runs twenty leagues from east to west, and forms a bay and harbour at its entrance into the sea. The third is Guasco, which rises in twenty-eight degrees latitude, and likewise forms a bay and harbour. The fourth is the river Coquimbo, which rises in thirty degrees latitude, forms a noble bay and a port, with beautiful myrtles and other trees on the bank, that make a noble and pleasant grove. The fifth is Aconcagna, a large deep river that rises about thirty-three degrees latitude, and runs thro' several fruitful valleys. The sixth is Maypo, rising about thirty-three and a half degrees latitude. It is so rapid that it admits no bridge but one made of cables: it enters the sea with so much force that its waters form an eddy, and are distinguished a great way. It is brackish, noted for excellent trouts, and its banks afford mutton of a curious relish.

Ovalle gives an account of many remarkable fountains in this country, both hot and cold, and good against many distempers. He says that there are some salt lakes which bring in a great profit to the owners, because their fisheries are more certain than those of the sea; they furnish most part of the lenten fair to the inhabitants, and, in the hot season, abundance of salt.

He adds, that in the valley of Lampa, near St. Jago, there is an herb, about a foot high, resembling sweet basil, which in summer is covered with grains of salt like pearl, having a finer flavour than

any

any other salt. The coast, he says, produces shell-fish in greater quantities than any-where else; as oysters, which are good eating, and afford fine pearls; choros, another sort of shell-fish, which also breeds pearl; monegues, which have two round shells, the inside of which resembles mother of pearl. In short, the sea throws up shell-fish in such quantities, upon some part of the coast, that ships may be loaded with them; and their shells are of such variety of colours and shapes, that our European virtuosi might from hence have a curious collection, whereas the Indians only burn them for chalk. There are other sorts of fish on these coasts, some of which they call sea-stars, others suns and moons, because they resemble these planets. These fish, reduced into powder and drank in wine, are an infallible remedy against drunkenness, and frequently used for that end, creating an abhorrence of wine in those who drink it. Great quantities of amber are found on this coast, particularly the grey sort, which is the best. They have all other sorts of fish common to Europe, besides many peculiar to themselves.

Besides those birds which are known in Europe, there are flamengoes, larger than turkies, their feathers of a white and scarlet colour, of which the natives make ornaments, and their legs are so long that they walk thro' lakes and ponds. The child-bird, so called because it looks like a swaddled child with its arms at liberty, is very good meat. Ariones, so much valued for their feathers to make tufts, that formerly, they say, every feather upon their heads cost two rials. These birds are very rare. There are others, called gascollos, whose feathers are generally used by soldiers. Voycas, from whose notes the Indians pretend to foretel death, sickness, or other misfortunes: the feathers on their breasts are of a deep scarlet colour, and the rest brown. Pin-guedas:

guedas : their body is of the size of an almond : they feed upon flowers, and shine like polished gold mixed with green : the males have a lively orange colour tuft, like fire, on their heads ; and the tails of those birds are a foot long, and two inches broad. Condores, which are prodigiously large, and white as ermine, their skins are extreme soft and warm, and therefore used as gloves. Some of these birds have been known to measure ten feet with expanded wings. They have abundance of ostriches, and variety of hawks, in this country.

They had no cows, horses, sheep, hogs, house-cats, nor common dogs of any sort, goats, asses, or rabbits, till they were brought hither by the Spaniards ; but now all these are increased to a wonderful degree by the richness of the country and pasture ; so that one cow frequently yields one hundred and fifty pounds of tallow. A horse was formerly sold for one thousand crowns, but now they are so plenty that they send them yearly to Peru.

The most remarkable animals, not common with us, are their sheep, shaped like camels, tho' not so large. The natives used them for ploughing and carriage before they had European cattle. Their upper-lips are slit, with which they spit at those who vex them, and wherever the spittle falls it causes a scab. Wild goats, very much resembling their sheep, but of a red clear colour, so very swift that they out-run horses, and are never to be tamed. They feed in great herds, and are hunted by dogs, which easily catch their young ones, that are excellent meat. The flesh of the old ones, dried and smoked, is reckoned the best of its kind. These creatures, especially the oldest, have bezoar stones in a bag under their belly. Our author says he brought one of these stones to Italy which weighed thirty-two-ounces, and was as perfect an oval as if it had

had been formed by a turner. He gave the Indian who found it seventy pieces of eight for it.

Their most remarkable trees, besides what are common to Europe, are, the cinnamon tree, so called because the bark resembles the cinnamon. The guiac tree, which grows in the Cordillera, and is as hard and heavy as iron; a decoction whereof is good against many diseases. The sandal tree, very odoriferous, is a preservative against infectious distempers, and therefore used by the priests when they visit the sick. The magney, whose leaves are admirable against burnings. The fruit is like myrtle-berries, and of an excellent relish. The quelu, of whose fruit they make a very sweet drink. Iluigan, the Spaniards call it malde. It is of the shape and colour of pepper: it grows on a small tree, and makes an agreeable liquor, coveted by people of quality. The myrtilla, which grows on the mountains, from thirty-seven degrees latitude and upwards. Herrera says its fruit is a common food to the natives, not unlike a grape, and of this they make a wine that exceeds all other liquors. It is of a bright gold colour, will bear more water than any other wine, cheers the heart, never offends the stomach, but increases appetite. The vinegar made of it is very fine. Their cyprus, cedar and oak trees are extraordinary good.

Our author from the continent proceeds to the islands of Chili. The first whereof are those of Juan Fernandez. The second are those of Chiloe, which lie about forty-three degrees latitude, and form an archipelago of forty islands. He says the nature of the climate here is such that it rains almost all the year; so that only maiz, or such other grain as require but little sun, can ripen here. The chief diet of the inhabitants is the root papas, which is larger here than any-where else. They have excellent

lent shell-fish, very good poultry and hogs, some beeves and sheep.

The capital of this country is the city of *Castro*, which lies in the chief island, and is garrisoned by the Spaniards. Here they have great store of honey and wax, and some gold mines on the coast. Their chief manufacture is cloathing for the Indians; and they have vast woods of cedar trees of a prodigious size, with the planks of which they drive a great trade to *Chili* and *Peru*. The islands of *Chenas* lie in forty-five degrees latitude, but are of little use, because of the excessive rains which drown the soil.

The *Fine* island, which lies almost in the same latitude with *Val Paradiso* and *St. Jago*, has a safe harbour for ships, where they may ride in twenty or thirty fathom water. The Spaniards say it is a very beautiful island, abounding with trees, wild boars, and other game, affording excellent water and plenty of fish.

The north side of the island of *Mocha* is plain and low, but the south side rocky. The Dutch under *Spilberg* found a very generous reception from its natives, who furnished them with plenty of provisions, in exchange for cloaths, axes, &c.

The island of *South Maria* is thirteen leagues south-west from the city of *Conception*, and three from *Aranco*. It is very fruitful and temperate, lies in about thirty-seven degrees latitude, and is well inhabited. The islands of *Pedro de Sarmiento*, so called because he discovered them when in pursuit of *Sir Francis Drake*, are about eighty in number, and lie in about fifty degrees latitude: so that we suppose them to be those now called the *Duke of York's* islands, which lie a little to the northward of the *Streights of Magellan*.

Cuio, the third quarter of *Chili*, which lies on the other side of the *Cordillera*, towards the east,

is divided into several provinces, and quite differs in temperature from Chili. The summer here is excessive hot, and the inhabitants are so annoyed with bugs and musketoes that they lie abroad in their gardens and yards. They have almost perpetual thunder and lightning, and are much infested with poisonous insects. These are the bad qualities of the country; to compensate which, the soil, if possible, exceeds that of Chili in fruitfulness: the crops are richer, the fruits larger and of better taste, because of the greater heats: They have store of corn, wine, flesh, and all the fruits, roots and herbs of Europe, with large plantations of olives and almonds. The cold is not so sharp in winter as that of Chili, and the air much clearer, so that the season is then very temperate. They have great quantities of large excellent trouts, and other river fish. Of the fruit *algoraba* they make a bread so sweet that strangers cannot eat it. They supply Tucuman and Paraguay with figs, pomegranates, apples, dried peaches, grapes, and excellent wine and oil. Ovalle says, that in his time there were rich mines of gold and silver discovered there, which were reckoned to be better than those of Potosi; and that it had all necessaries for life in as great abundance as in any other country, and was in general very healthful.

C H A P. XIV.

The concert ships are hospitably entertained by the governor and inhabitants of Guam; the soil, product, &c. of that island described; the Marquis endangered by a water-spout; they arrive at Bouton island; they are received in a friendly manner by the king and his court; his majesty intends to impose upon them, but cannot; the unkind behaviour of the governor of Batavia to our cruizers; they arrive at the Cape of Good Hope; convoyed home; anchor in the Downs; conclusion.

JANUARY the 16th, on rummaging the Batchelor, there was on board her such a timely supply of bread, that she was able to afford to the Duke and Duchess each one thousand pounds weight, and to the Marquis five hundred; in return for which assistance, she received two casks of flower, one of beef, and one of pork. On the 28th the steward missed some pork, and the thief being discovered he was tied to the main-geers, where every man upon the watch gave him a stroke with a cat of nine tails. He would not have been so severely punished, but that there was an absolute necessity for it at this time, there not being more than one or two and thirty days provision on board.

February the 14th, to keep the men in spirits, their allowance was encreased, for that day, with half a pound of bread or flower to every mess; and the captain having put them on drawing valentines, afterwards allowed them to toast their mistresses healths in a can of punch. On the 17th, a piece of captain Rogers's jaw-bone, which had lodged in his throat ever since he had been wounded, was hap-

pily extracted ; in consequence whereof he was much easier than before.

March the 10th they made the islands of Serpana and Guam, and came to anchor near the latter in twelve fathom water, having been all day viewed by different prows which passed by them with prodigious celerity, but would not be induced by any means to come on board. As there was a necessity, and that an absolute one, for procuring a fresh supply of provisions here to prevent their starving ; it was determined, if possible, to get some people off the island on board, to detain as hostages, in case the governour should prove averse to granting them assistance. They accordingly laid hold of two Spaniards, who hailed them and came on board, supposing the Buccaneers from their answer to belong to New Spain. One of these was detained by way of hostage, while the other was sent a-shore with two linguists carrying a letter to the governor of the place, implying, That all they demanded was liberty to deal in a peaceable manner for provisions and refreshments, for which they would not only pay immediately, but demean themselves in every other respect like friends ; and threatening, in case of refusal, to act openly as enemies ; a proceeding which they would rather avoid, tho' confident of success.

In the morning of the 11th the pinnace was sent a-shore with a flag of truce, to the crew of which the natives behaved with great cordiality, promising a plentiful supply of provisions in case of the governor's permission, a grant whereof appeared about noon in a letter brought on board by the two linguists and three Spanish gentlemen, who gave fresh assurances of the governor's readiness to do every thing in his power to serve them. A suitable answer to which polite declaration was straightway dispatched

patched to his excellency, with the thanks of the crews of the four ships, signed by all the captains.

On the 13th every ship was supplied with limes, oranges, cocoa-nuts, and other refreshments, besides one bullock a-piece; and an entertainment was provided on board the Batchelor for several of the Spanish gentry, at which the officers of all the vessels were present, captain Rogers not excepted, tho' he was hoisted up and down in a chair.

On the 16th they went a-shore, by invitation, to the governor's house, where they were received by two hundred men in arms, and all the principal people of the island, being entertained with sixty different dishes, and at their departure presenting his excellency with two negroes in handsome liveries, twenty yards of scarlet cloth-ferge, and six pieces of fine cambrick.

On the 17th they got in their dividend of provisions, being sixty hogs, ninety-nine fowls, twenty-four bushels of Indian corn, fourteen bags of rice, forty-four baskets of yams, and eight hundred cocoa-nuts. The next day they got some live but lean cattle; and having acknowledged the governor's kindness in writing, besides paying every body very handsomely for whatever they had bought, they got under sail on the 21st: and we shall leave them getting clear of this island, to give a short description of the soil, products, and situation.

The island of Guam is about forty leagues round: the anchoring-place is on the west side, and about the middle there is a large cove, with several houses built after the Spanish taste, with accommodations for the Acapulco ship, the settlement being made here on purpose for that ship to recruit at in her way to Manila. There are about three hundred Spaniards on this and the neighbouring islands, and most of the natives are converts to their religious principles. Here were at this time eight fathers, six

of whom taught school, besides performing their offices as clergymen. They had schools also taught by Mullatoes and Indians, who had learned the Spanish language, which is understood by most of the natives. There is a range of islands from hence to Japan, among which are several that abound with gold.

The island of Guam itself produces fine oranges, lemons, citrons, musk, and water-melons, which were originally brought here by the Spaniards. Orange trees thrive here very well. The island is full of hills, dales, and streams of good water. They have plenty of cattle, but small, poor, and generally white. The indigo plant grows wild in such abundance, that, were they industrious, and had coppers to boil it up, they might have great quantities of that commodity; but being so remote, and out of the way of trade, they make no use of it: nor do they indeed improve any thing but what contributes to their present subsistence: having that, they are easy. Money is of so little use, and so scarce among them, that they could not raise one thousand dollars to purchase commodities from captain Rogers, which they would otherwise gladly have done.

They have about two hundred soldiers, who receive their pay from Manila by a small ship once a year. This ship brings them cloaths, sugar, rice and liquor; for which she carries back most of the money again. This has made them of late sow rice in their valleys, and make other improvements. They abound with hogs, which are the best pork in the world, because they feed altogether on coconuts and bread-fruit, which are plentiful here; and were not the Spaniards slothful, they might have most necessaries of their own growth for the maintenance of life. Their bread-fruit is the most remarkable thing on the island. It is as large as
oranges,

oranges, resembles them much, and when ripe is three times as large; it grows in many other places near the equinox in the East-Indies. The leaves are almost as large as those of figs, something like them, but of a brown colour.

The wind blows constantly at south-east here, except during the westerly monsoons, which last from the middle of June to the middle of August.

The governor lives on the north side of the island, where there is a small village and a convent, being the chief habitation of the Spaniards. They marry with the natives, and had not now above four Spanish women on the island.

The Indians are tall and strong, of a dark olive colour, go all naked, except a clout about their posteriors, and the women have little petticoats. The men are dextrous at slinging lumps of clay, of an oval form, burned as hard as marble; and they are such good marksmen, that the Spaniards say they seldom miss hitting any mark; and throw with such force as to kill a man at a considerable distance. They have no other weapons, but a stick or lance made of the heaviest wood in the island.

The governor presented captain Rogers with one of their flying prows, which the Spaniards said would run twenty leagues per hour; and captain Rogers verily believes, by what he saw, they may run twenty miles, or more, in that space of time; for when they viewed the English ships, they passed by them like a bird that was flying.

These prows are about thirty feet long, not above two broad, and about three deep; they have but one mast, which stands in the middle, with a mat sail, made in the form of a ship's mizzen: the yard is slung in the middle, and a man sits at each end with a paddle to steer her; so that when they go about, they do not turn the boat to bring the wind on the other side, but only change the sail; so that the

jack and sail are used alike; and the boat's head and stern are the same, only they change them as occasion requires to sail either way; for they are so very narrow that they could not bear any sail, were it not for booms that run out from the windward side, fastened to a large log shaped like a boat, and near half as long, which is fastened contiguous to the boat. On these booms a stage is made above the water, on a level with the side of the boat, upon which they carry goods or passengers. These small vessels sometimes overset, if the wind happens to press strongly on the contrary side to the outlayer, or log just now mentioned.

April the 14th, being in twenty degrees north latitude, or thereabouts, they came so near three water-spouts that one of them was near breaking over the Marquis, but was happily dispersed by a couple of lucky shots from the Ducheſs. On the 23d the Marquis and the Batchelor were damaged in their riging by a violent storm which had lasted four or five days, and they both being but indifferent sailors were a dead weight upon the voyage, the fatigues whereof encreased to the Duke's crew by their being obliged constantly to ply at the pump, on account of a leak on board, which could not as yet be stopped.

Having coasted for several days along the high lands of New Guinea, with several islands in sight, they made Bouton on the 25th of May; for which island the Duke and Ducheſs each hoisted out her pinnace, which soon returned with plenty of cocoa-nuts, and reported that the inhabitants, who spoke the Malayan language, were very civil and hospitable. At this time the vessels sought in vain for proper ground wherein to anchor, for altho' they run their boltsprit almost ashore they could find none. In the mean time several canoes brought fowls, Indian corn, cocoa-nuts, pumpkins, &c. which they trucked
with

with the sailors; some of whom Rogers sent with the yawl and pinnace to land, where they were received by the king and his nobility in a very courteous manner, and promised a sufficient supply of all necessaries. Not only his majesty's attendants, but he himself, were barefooted and naked, having only a slight covering wrapped round the middle, which also concealed their posteriors. After cruizing round the head lands, and sounding for three or four days, they at length got anchoring in one hundred and thirty fathom water, deepening to forty, south latitude five degrees forty-one minutes: and here both the Duke and Duchess came to their moorings. The Duke's boat soon after returned with some Malaysians in a canoe, who had been prevailed upon to come by presents: but these were of no use, there not being any on board either of the ships who could discourse with them; and captain Dover, who had a linguist, refused to lend him, tho' upon so necessary an occasion; neither would those people be prevailed upon to go on board the Batchelor, she being in danger of running on the shoals: however, at quitting the Duke, they pointed to the land which lay northward, calling it Botoo.

Captain Dampier said he had formerly been thro' the Streights of Bouton; and, in the account of this voyage, mentions a town to the south of them where a king resided; but it appeared at this time that he knew nothing relative to these matters but the story. The shore near the town, about six leagues to the northward, seemed very proper to refit upon; and captain Rogers would have carried the Duke thither, in order to have stopped her leaks, but he found she did not make more water than one pump freed her of, and besides time was not to be lost.

May the 29th, it was determined to send captain Dampier, attended by Mr. Vanbrugh, Mr. Conne y, and the linguist, by way of deputation, to the king,

desiring a supply of refreshments, and proffering very sufficient payment. These gentlemen were received by him very courteously, and he appeared well satisfied with the samples which they shewed him of such goods as they chose to give in barter, and was also highly pleased with a bishop's mitre, which was sent him as a present. The inhabitants began now to flock on board fast enough, with co-coa, fowls, corn, and every sort of refreshment. June the first they supplied themselves with wood and water, and the pinnace returned from the town but with a blind account of the proceedings of the officers; presently after captain Dampier came aboard with a small quantity of provisions, by way of present to the commanders.

Captain Rogers did not approve of the delays made by the king with respect to the provisions, a large quantity of which he had amassed, and wanted to dispose of at a very exorbitant rate, detaining Mr. Vanbrugh till his demands were complied with; however he was obliged to give him up, otherwise captain Rogers would have imprisoned his linguist, who was a Portuguese, and of such use to his majesty, in all commercial matters, that he could not possibly spare him. Mr. Vanbrugh and he parted very good friends, but could not prevail with him to furnish a pilot to conduct them thro' the Streights at any rate: as to his keeping up the price of provisions, they were the less uneasy on that score, having been furnished with as much as they should want, for at least three weeks before hand, by the country people.

During their being on this island, a dangerous mutiny, which had spread from the Duke to the Ducheſs, and infected several of the officers, was happily discovered, otherwise it might have ruined the whole voyage; and the ring-leaders being laid in irons, were divided on board the different ships.

On the 8th of June they weighed anchor, and the following day came up with a Dutch vessel bound for Macassar, a Dutch settlement on the south part of Celebes. The master, who was a Malayan, promised not only to pilot them thro' the Streights, but even to Batavia, for a small gratuity, provided it was kept secret from the Dutch; and the captain readily consented to grant all his demands, this being a very happy incident in their favour, as they were thereby enabled to avoid the Brill, the Bunker, and other shoals very dangerous to shipping; the shunning of which properly is best known to the Holland traders. On the 15th they saw a number of fishing-boats, which all kept aloof, the high land of Japara, on the coast of Java, bearing distant from them five leagues west, and by south. On the 17th they hailed a Dutch ship of six hundred tons and fifty guns, which confirmed to them the death of prince George of Denmark, and the continuance of the wars in Europe. On the 20th they entered the road of Batavia, and came to anchor in six or seven fathoms water, among upwards of thirty sail of ships. On the 22d the commanders waited on the governor, who having examined and approved of their commissions as private ships of war, promised to yield them all the friendly assistance possible; but he was not over exact in keeping his word, for it was a great while before they could get a vessel to careen upon, which at last they obtained; and on the 23d of July they hove down upon Horn Island: provisions were disposed of to them at an extravagant dear rate, and when an audience of the governor was wanted, which was on many occasions necessary, it was not obtained without much difficulty, such as bribing the guards, or his secretary; nor was it always that this method prevailed: and we cannot help observing, that it has been almost always the case at the Dutch settlements, where the

Chief people generally receive our ships with a face of friendship, while underhand they treat them like real enemies.

As Horn Island was a very inconvenient place whereat to careen, the commanders to no purpose petitioned the governor for leave to perform that work at Unrest, the careening place of the Dutch ships, for this was a favour they could by no means obtain, nor yet the assistance of Dutch carpenters, so that they were obliged to make use of eight or ten Malayan caulkers.

As a completion of these oppressive measures, the sabander, or chief acting officer at the custom-house, for the management of the affairs of foreigners, who was related to the governor, and manifested no friendship to our voyagers declared, that in case any Dutchman should purchase the Marquis, which ship it was agreed to part with, he should be obliged to burn or rip her up; adding, that this was an unalterable resolution of the governor and council: so that it was necessary to dispose of her to the first English bidder, which was captain John Opey, of the Oley frigate, from London, who purchased her for five hundred and seventy-five Dutch dollars; and she was certainly a very great bargain.

Captain Rogers recovered his health very slowly at Batavia, where during his stay, a large musket-ball, which the surgeon hitherto had mistaken for a piece of his broken jaw, was cut out of his cheek, and several splinters were extracted from his foot and heel: several of the men were carried off by fluxes, which drinking the waters of the island is apt to give; however, they corrected its ill qualities with plenty of arrack and sugar, the former being eight pence per gallon, the latter one penny per pound.

October the 12th, having stocked themselves with provisions, manned the ships with their full complement, and the officers and men being furnished with
such

such necessaries as they most needed, for which a full committee of the three ships had ordered them sufficient money, they set sail for the Cape of Good Hope, taking the opportunity of the first land breeze. October the 17th, having wooded and watered at Java Head, within Prince's Island, they proceeded on their voyage, and on the 28th of December came to anchor in the Cape harbour, saluting the Dutch fort with nine guns, which returned them a compliment of seven. Here they waited for a convoy of the Dutch fleet to Europe till the beginning of April, tho' captain Rogers strongly opposed this delay, judging it better for one or both ships to run over to Brazil, there to dispose of their most perishable commodities, and afterwards to make for Bristol thro' the north channel; but the majority of the committee carried it against him: and tho' there was a very troublesome leak on board the Duke, captain Courtney, and most of the other officers, denied their consent to her being careened, without which it was scarcely possible to come at the leak; so that Rogers was forced to trust himself at sea in a very indifferent condition. April the 5th, the Dutch admiral hoisted a blue flag, and loosened his fore-top sail, as a signal to unmoor; and falling down to Penguin Island, lay by for all the ships. The day following, the fleet, consisting of sixteen Dutch and nine English ships, weighed from Penguin island with a fresh breeze at south south-east. Captain Rogers informs us that during the whole run of the voyage from the Cape to Holland, the most exact discipline was observed by the fleet, and the greatest respect paid to the Dutch admiral, tho' he commanded only a company's trading ship. Rogers does not tell us this gentleman's name, but says that, besides his being a man of capacity, he had great good nature, and was respectful to the English who sailed in his company, often entertaining the commanders

commanders on board his ship, and permitting the Batchelor prize, as being an heavy sailer, often to be a-head of the fleet in the night, that she might not lose way. July the 23d they all arrived in the Texel, whereat the Dutch fired all their guns, and the English saluted the commodore and flag with several rounds of cannon.

On the 24th, after dinner, captain Rogers went up to Amsterdam, where he bought up some provisions for the ship; and the 1st of August they discharged the men they had shipped at Batavia and the Cape. At Amsterdam they were met by one Mr. Holledge, and some others of their owners, who made them draw up an abstract of their voyage, and swear to it before a public notary, lest the East India company should pretend they infringed upon their rights in touching at any of their settlements.

Matters being thus adjusted, they weighed anchor from the Texel on the 22d of September, and on the 1st of October came to their Moorings in the Downs, where they were visited by some of their owners; and on the 14th they came up as far as Eriff, where they began to unlade their cargoes, in hope soon to enjoy the comforts of ease in Old England, as the fruit of so perilous and well-conducted a voyage.

...annon.
...after dinner, capital
...chain, which he brought
...and the 1st of
...charged the men in
...A. A. A. A. A.

...of their houses, and
...the country, and the

...of the
...of the
...of the



Island of S^t HELENA, belonging to the English East India Company



An ACCOUNT of the VOYAGE round
the WORLD, made in the Years 1740,
41, 42, 43, and 44, by GEORGE, now
LORD ANSON.

C H A P. I.

Mr. Anson made commodore of a small squadron; sails from St. Helens; arrives at Madera; a short description of that island; a Spanish fleet sent to the West Indies to oppose him; its melancholy fate; the bravery of the Indian Orellana and his unhappy followers.

OUR design in compiling these voyages, being to throw the materially connected facts relative to each, into the most concise and entertaining order, it would be foreign to the purpose, as well as inconsistent with the space which we have here allowed ourselves, to detain the reader with an account of the various delays Mr. Anson met with from several quarters, after his being named as commander in chief of a secret expedition, in the year 1739 to the 10th of August 1740, when he sailed, in company with several men of war and many outward bound merchantmen, from Spithead to St. Helens. Here he waited more than forty days for a wind, and at length weighed anchor on the 18th of September; and tho' it still continued westerly, consequently unfavourable, he cleared the Channel in four days.

Mr. Anson's squadron consisted of five ships, viz. the Centurion, of sixty guns and four hundred men, on board which was the commodore himself; the Gloucester,

Gloucester, Richard Norris commander, carrying fifty guns and three hundred men; the Severn, commanded by the honourable Edward Legg, having the same complement of men and guns; the Pearl, captain Matthew Mitchel, with forty guns and two hundred and fifty men; the Wager, captain Kidd, with twenty-eight guns and one hundred and sixty men; and the Trial sloop, eight guns and one hundred men, under command of the honourable George Murray; and two victuallers the Anna and Industry, pinks; the latter of which having fulfilled her charter-party was unladed at sea, on the 16th of November, and her cargoe divided among the other vessels. She was bound to Barbadoes; in return from which island to Great Britain with a valuable lading, she was taken by the Spaniards.

On board this Squadron, which was destined to cruize upon the Spaniards in the South Seas, it had first been proposed to embark three independant companies, of one hundred men each, and colonel Bland, with his own regiment, as commander in chief of the land officers; but how this appointment came to dwindle into four hundred and seventy invalids, draughted from Chelsea, and commanded by lieutenant colonel Cracherode, is too nice a matter for us to investigate; let it suffice that we observe most of them were old and infirm, much fitter for the hospital from whence it was their misfortune to be selected, than for an expedition to surmount the evident perils of which required youth, strength, and sound constitution. September the 29th, having parted in their appointed latitudes, the different vessels, with convoying which he had been clogged, Mr. Anson made the best of his way for Madera, in the road of which island he came to anchor, October the 25th, in forty fathom water, the Brazen-head bearing from him east and by east, and the great church north north-east.

The climate of Madera is extremely healthful, temperate and pleasant. It lies in north latitude thirty-two degrees seventeen minutes, running due east and west, being a continued ridge of very high land, the southern declivity whereof is beautifully interspersed with country seats belonging to merchants, and covered with vineyards, the produce of which is a wine in universal estimation, as well for its fine flavour as its many good qualities.

Fonchiale is the only town on this island: it is seated on the south part of it, at the bottom of a large bay, and is defended by a high wall and a battery of cannon, besides a fortified castle standing on the Loo, a rock rising above the water not far from shore. The landing-place being a stony beach over which the Surf almost perpetually lashes with great violence, the commodore, not caring to venture his own, made use of Portuguese boats to bring water, provisions, and other necessaries, on board his little fleet. Here he learned from the governor that seven or eight ships, supposed to be enemies, had passed by to the westward a few days before his arrival; of which Squadron he could obtain no farther intelligence, tho' he dispatched an officer in a clean sloop eight leagues to the westward to look after them, who returned without having seen them.

There was great reason to suspect that these ships, apprized of Mr. Anson's designs, were dispatched to the Spanish settlements, to prepare them for his reception; and that these suspicions were but too well grounded, appeared from the people of Panama, long before his arrival in those seas, being able to describe both his strength and destination; and the Spanish commodore having so exactly imitated Mr. Anson's broad pendant, that the captain of the Pearl gave into the decoy, without perceiving his mistake till within gun-shot.

Before we proceed in our review of Mr. Anson's progress after he left Madera, a short account of the melancholy catastrophe of these Spanish ships may not prove perhaps disagreeable to the majority of our readers; the winds and waves having seemed to unite in their overthrow, without the assistance of any other enemy.

This squadron, consisting of five ships, viz. the *Asia*, of sixty-six guns and seven hundred men, on board whereof sailed the admiral Don Joseph Pizarro: the *Guiposcoa*, of seventy-four guns and seven hundred men; the *Hermiona*, of fifty-four guns and five hundred men; the *Esperanza*, of fifty guns and four hundred and fifty men; the *St. Estevan*, of forty guns and three hundred men; and a tender, mounting twenty guns, having on board their full complement of sailors and marines, besides an old regiment of foot to reinforce the garrisons in the South Seas, arrived in the bay of Maldonado, in the river Plate, on the 26th of October, intending there to take in provisions, having stocked themselves in Old Spain with barely a four months supply: yet with this small, and almost exhausted, store, did he again put to sea, and endeavour to double Cape Horn, upon being apprized privately of the English squadron's arrival at St. Catherine's; his intention being, if possible, to get into the South Seas first. Many advantages were allowed to the common men to inspire them to do their duty well, and enable them to bear the fatigues and perils that openly threatened them in an undertaking so hazardous, precipitate, and we may even say imprudent, as the provisions which were expected, arrived from Buenos Ayres at Maldonado the day after he weighed anchor, and the want of them increased the calamities he afterwards underwent, to an incredible degree. The last day of February the *Guiposcoa*, the *Hermiona*, and the *Esperanza*

Esperanza were separated from the rest of the fleet, and they were all forced to bear away for the river Plate, by a prodigious storm at north-west, which, in spite of their utmost efforts, drove them to the eastward.

The calamities they suffered are almost incredible; a rat on board the *Asia* sold for four dollars, and one of the sailors endured to lie four days in the same hammock with the dead corpse of his brother that he might receive his allowance, while a conspiracy was set on foot by the marines, to murder all the officers and sailors, from no other motive but that of engrossing to themselves the ship's provisions. This design was indeed happily discovered, and the number of craving mouths lessened by the deaths of the ringleaders of it: besides which commotion, so much was their distress encreased by sickness and fatigue, that when this vessel came to anchor at Monte Vedio, in the river Plate, which place she did not reach till the middle of May, she had lost more than half her crew. The fate of the *Esteven* was as bad; that of the *Esperanza* was still worse; for out of a crew of four hundred men only fifty-eight survived, and the whole regiment of foot, fifty men excepted, perished. As for the *Guiposcoa*, after a long time driving on the surface of the water, as a meer wreck, without either masts or rigging, the butt-ends of her planks started, her bolts drawn, her seams all open, and only kept together by six turns of cable-rope tightened round her, the surviving crew, to the number of four hundred, run her a-shore at Rio de Patas, on the coast of Brazil, ten leagues to the southward of St. Catherine, ashore, ashore, being the general cry the moment they came near land, where she soon sunk with all her rich goods and furniture. As for the *Hermiona*, neither she, nor any of the hands, have been since heard of, so that it is reasonably supposed

supposed she perished at sea. As for the twenty gun tender, she had been broken up before they set out from Maldonado.

The series of Pizarro's evils were not yet at an end; for in the year 1745, coming over land from Chili to Buenos Ayres, with one of his officers who had commanded the Guiposcoa, they found the shattered *Asia* lying still at Mont Vedio, with which, having refitted her in the best manner possible, they thought to proceed to Europe; but not having above one hundred of their old hands to navigate her, they supplied the want by pressing several of the inhabitants of Buenos Ayres; and moreover putting on board her a few English prisoners, several Portuguese smugglers, and some of the country Indians, among whom were Orellana, and ten of his followers. He was chief of a powerful tribe, who had lately given great disturbance to the peace of Buenos Ayres; and these had not long before been surprized and made prisoners by a party of Spanish horse.

With this motley crew they set sail about the beginning of November, and the officers shewed very little policy, as well as small share of commiseration, in their behaviour to the prisoners, treating them all, English as well as Indian, with great barbarity; while Orellana, tho' to appearance patient in all his sufferings, together with his people, meditated a severe revenge upon his oppressors: he endeavoured to cultivate an intimacy with such of the English as spoke Spanish, a language in which he was well versed; and it is not unlikely but he would have disclosed his scheme to them, knowing them to be enemies to the Spaniards as well as himself, had he found them of inclinations equally vindictive; but being disappointed in this expectation, he proceeded only with his ten faithful followers, on whose courage and resolution he entirely relied; and the following accident precipitated his design.

Orellana,

Orellana having one day refused to go aloft, a task to which he was quite unequal, was therefore by one of the officers, remarkable for nothing so much as his brutality, knocked down, and beaten in such a violent manner that he lay bleeding upon deck for more than two hours, so-stupified with his wounds that he was scarcely able to stir; wherefore, about nine in the evening, a day or two after this ill usage, which sharpened his desire of revenge, when the principal officers were enjoying the cool air on the quarter-deck, the fore-castle was manned with only the customary watch, and the waste was filled with live cattle, he, together with his followers, came upon the quarter-deck, having armed themselves with sharp Dutch knives, which, being used at meals on board, were easily procured, and with slings made of thongs of ram hides, to the ends whereof were fastened the double-headed shot of the small quarter-deck guns. As they approached the great cabin-door, being ordered by the boatswain, not without a severe reprimand for their encroachment, to withdraw, four of them drew off on each side towards the gangway, and the other six, with their chief, affected to retire slowly; instead whereof, as soon as Orellana saw the gangways possessed by his detached parties, he set up the war cry, a sound perhaps the most terrifying that ever was heard, by clapping his hand hollow to his mouth; upon which they all drew their knives, and brandished their slings so successfully, that they laid at least twenty Spaniards dead at their feet, and disabled above twenty more.

The confusion that this massacre spread among the ship's crew is not to be described; most of the principal officers in the beginning pushed into the great cabin, where they extinguished the light and barricadoed the door, while some threw themselves into the waste among the cattle; numbers hid themselves

in the shrouds, and many who strove to gain the gangways fell by the knives of the four Indians who guarded them. Orellana having entirely cleared the quarter-deck, broke open the chest of arms, which had been removed thither a few days before on a slight suspicion of mutiny, but to his great disappointment found nothing but fire-arms; had he had the presence of mind to have removed these, he would have come at the cutlasses of which he was in search, wherewith he intended to have forced the great cabin, for the cutlass is a weapon in the use of which the Indians are well skilled.

In the mean time Pizarro and his officers began to come at a true knowledge of the state of affairs, by conversing with each other thro' the port-holes and windows; and understanding the English, whom they had much feared, were not concerned in the mutiny, resolved to attack the Indians before any other of the malecontents should recover their surprize and join them; for which purpose, ammunition being lowered to them in a bucket from the powder-room, they loaded their pistols, having no other arms, and then venturing to set the cabin door a little open, they fired among the Indians, and Mindinuetta, who had commanded the Guiposcoa, having the good fortune to shoot Orellana dead on the spot, his companions, disdaining to survive their gallant chief, leaped instantly overboard, and every man of them perished in the sea.

Thus, after the vessel had been more than two hours in possession of this brave Indian, did Pizarro once again regain the command of it, and arrived safely therewith on the coast of Galicia, in 1746, after having been absent from Europe near five years; and by his assiduity in watching the motions of Mr. Anson, having occasioned the destruction of four fine ships of war and a tender, besides curtailing the naval power of Spain of more than three thousand
able

able hands; a loss not easily to be repaired, and which it is plain would have sufficiently attoned for the equipment of Mr. Anson's squadron, independent of every other advantage, if we reflect upon the weakness of the marine power of Spain at that time.

CH A P. II.

The squadron arrives at the island of St. Catherine; the conduct of the governor set forth; that island described, and a short review of Brazile; they proceed to Port St. Julian; that port and the country described; Mr. Anson's vast distresses in doubling Cape Horn; he makes the island of Juan Fernandes.

AT the time that we diverted our attention to the fate of the Spanish squadron, commanded by Don Joseph Pizarro, we left Mr. Anson at anchor in the road of Madera, from which place he departed on the 3d of November, intending for St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verd islands; but this resolution he altered the next day, on account of the advancement of the season, and steered for St. Catherine's, an island on the coast of Brazile; the land whereof, extending from west to west south-west, and appearing high and mountainous about seventeen leagues distant, they discovered on the 16th of December, and on the 18th dropped anchor in twelve fathom water, muddy ground; the north-west point of the island bearing south south-west. To prevent the confusion which the arrival of this squadron seemed to create, by the forts firing their guns and hoisting their colours, the commodore dispatched an officer to compliment the governor, and desire a pilot to bring him into the road; a request that

was

was immediately complied with very civilly; and on Sunday the 21st they were brought up past the castle of Santa Cruze, which they saluted with eleven guns, and had an equal compliment returned them.

This island has been celebrated by other navigators for the wholesomeness of the air, the plenty of refreshments which it yields, and the hospitality of the natives; the direct contrary of all which assertions Mr. Anson experienced to be true. That gentleman's first care, on his arrival here, was to order all the sick a-shore into tents pitched purposely for their reception: their number amounted to eighty on board the *Centurion*, nor were the infirm on board the other ships proportionably less: yet the land air was of so very little advantage to them that before they left the place the aforementioned vessel buried twenty-eight of her hands, and carried away ninety-six in a very weak diseased condition, their principal disorder being calentures, which they had contracted in their run from Madera, occasioned perhaps by the warmth of the climate, and the offensive smell, that must consequentially reign among such a number of men. The proportionable loss of the other ships did not fall very short of that of the *Centurion*.

They next proceeded to cleanse each vessel thoroughly, by smoking her decks and washing them well with vinegar; after which operation they examined and paid her bottom, and likewise secured her masts and rigging, the better to prepare her for a voyage round Cape Horn, the dangers of which were so evident to the commodore, that he appointed the different places of rendezvous, the first whereof was to be Port St. Julian, where they were to be stationed for ten days, and take in salt; the second, the island *Nuestra Senora del Secoro*, where they were to ply off and on from five to twelve leagues distant, till their wood and water was consumed; and then they were to proceed to Juan Fer-

nandes

nandes to take in a fresh supply; and there, if they should chance to hear nothing of their commodore, he ordered that the senior officer should take upon him the principal command, giving him, Mr. Anson, up for lost; and having cruized as long in those seas as he could find a subsistence, he was to make the best of his way to Macao, and from thence stretch over to England with all possible expedition.

They set sail from this island January the 18th, having taken in their wood and water with a sufficient quantity of fresh provisions, for which the governor Don Jose Sylva de Paz took care they should pay extravagantly dear: nor was this the worst part of his conduct; for it was thro' his means that intelligence of the strength of Mr. Anson's squadron was so well known at Buenos Ayres; and a person of less prudence than Mr. Anson always manifested, would have come to an open breach with him, as many parts of his behaviour were calculated entirely for that end: and if he did not succeed therein, we must attribute it to the commodore's preferring the public good to the gratification of private animosity. Nor need we be surprized that this gentleman, tho' a man of quality, and a brigadier in the army, behaved himself in this case so very badly, when we consider that he carried on a smuggling trade with the neighbouring Spaniards, exchanging gold for silver, whereby the kings of Spain and Portugal were both defrauded of their fifths; and had any of the vessels engaged in this illegal commerce, fallen into the hands of the commodore, his private dealings had inevitably been discovered; for which reason it is plain he could be no friend to the English squadron.

The island of St. Catherine lies close to the continent of Brazile, between twenty-seven and twenty-

eight degrees south latitude: it is a high land, about nine leagues long and two broad; the soil over-run with wood, and so entangled with thorns, briar, and underwood, as to be almost impenetrable. Here are plenty of pine-apples, lemons, oranges, citron, peaches, grapes, apricots, and plantains; and the air is odoriferously perfumed by the vast quantities of aromatic trees and shrubs, of a spontaneous growth, which are seen on every hand to flourish. Onions and potatoes thrive here well, and are of great use to shipping; but not much can be said in praise of the black cattle, which are small, somewhat like buffaloes in shape, but of an indifferent taste, owing perhaps to their feeding chiefly on wild calabashes; nor are the pheasants of St. Catherine over good; but then the fish, which abounds on every side of the island, is excellent; nor is the flesh of its parrots and monkeys to be despised. The water of this island, like that of the Thames, is well calculated for keeping at sea; having, after being casked up a day or two, a green scum upon its surface, which soon after subsides, and sinking to the bottom leaves the water clear and very sweet. There is good anchorage and convenience for wood and water on the continent side, at a place, called by the French, Bon port. But Mr. Anson found a good birth, with store of wood and water, &c. at a plantation on the opposite side. It must be obvious to the slightest consideration, that the climate cannot be very healthful, the free circulation of the air being prevented by the surrounding hills and the thick woods on every side, which are cleared in very few places for plantations: moreover, the constant circulation of vapour, which is very great, covers the whole country every morning with a thick fog, till it is either dissipated by the sea breeze or meridian heat of the sun. Hence comes it that the place is so close and humid as to occasion severe fe-

vers and very violent fluxes; besides which disadvantages, the swarms of muskettoes and sand-flies, the latter of which are scarcely discernible, and bite like bugs, render this island a very disagreeable habitation.

St. Catherine's was, till within these few years, a retreat for the outlaws of Brazile, who lived here very much at ease under the care of a sort of a captain, who in some measure acknowledged the Portuguese jurisdiction. In this happy asylum they forgot the use of money, having plenty of almost every thing needful within themselves, cloaths excepted, wherewith they were supplied by such ships as touched here, which in return they stored with provisions. However, things here wear now a different aspect: the governor no longer is seen to traverse the island barefooted, with such a garment thrown over him as manifests its being made for use and not for show; while a naked, but contented, banditti follow at his heels: his appearance now is splendid, but he has a garrison of ragged soldiers under his command. The occasion of this alteration is, that great riches are thought to be intermixed with the sands of the neighbouring rivers, and that the harbour before mentioned is the most capacious and secure upon the coast; so that it is not impossible but that it may, in time, become one of the most considerable settlements in South America.

Whoever considers, that it is not much more than forty years, since Brazile was discovered to possess those quantities of treasure, which have so enriched the crown of Portugal, will not be in the least surprized should they find this expectation verified. Thro' the whole country of Brazile, at the depth of twenty-four feet from the surface, there is said to run a thin vein of gold, the particles whereof are carried by the springs and heavy rains into the contiguous streams, from the sands of

which they are gathered by the negroes employed for that purpose, they being obliged, one day with another, to furnish their masters with one eighth of an ounce of gold clay, about nine shillings sterling in value; and whatever surplus they obtain, is, by a fixed law, their own: so that it sometimes chanches, when they hit upon a wealthy stream, that they purchase slaves themselves, and live in great splendour. The king of Portugal's fifths of the gold yearly exported from Brazile to Lisbon, is said to amount to three hundred thousand pounds, the capital whereof is a million and a half.

Diamonds are also the natural produce of this country, and are found, as well as the gold, in the beds of rivers, in such abundance, that to prevent their growing too plenty, the king of Portugal has lately established a diamond company, in which a certain property of all the diamonds found in Brazile is vested, and which is restricted to the use of but eight hundred slaves in searching for them. This was a very necessary caution, for it is very likely there are immense quantities of these valuable gems among the rocks of crystal that are scattered thro' the mountains of the country, whence they are washed by the torrents into the rivers from which they are taken; but then it is to be observed, that it requires more than ordinary skill to discover a diamond, in the rough coat that obscures its lustre, before it passes thro' the hand of the polisher.

It is not above twenty years, since this precious commodity was discovered here; and before there was a certain confirmation of their value, one of the governors is said to have acquired a vast fortune by collecting several of the stones, which he kept by him as counters; while many Portuguese, still living, remember with regret their having flung away some of these apparent pebbles, which were of prodigious value. Many of the diamonds that have been

been of late brought hence into Europe, are said to be in no respect whatever inferior to the very best ever known in the East-Indies.

But it is time to return to Mr. Anson's Squadron, which we observed before left St. Catherine's on the 8th of January, the third day after which, they were attacked by a violent storm, and a fog so very thick, that the fleet was therein totally dispersed; however, they all joined again the following day, the Pearl excepted, which they did not come up with till near a month after, when they were almost arrived at Port St. Julian, where it was absolutely necessary to make some delay to refit the Trial, which had lost her main-mast in the aforementioned storm; it was during this time that the Pearl had like to have been taken, as was before observed, by Pizarro; and that her commander captain Kidd died, who was succeeded by the honourable captain Murray, captain Cheap being turned over to the Wager, and the command of the Trial being by the commodore conferred upon lieutenant Charles Saunders of the Centurion, till whose recovery from a fever, under which he then laboured, Mr. Saumarez, another of the Centurion's lieutenants, was ordered to act as master and commander of the Trial.

February the 18th, the squadron came to anchor in the bay of St. Julian on the coast of Patagonia, where the Trial was immediately put in repair, being supplied by the Wager with a spare main-top-mast, which she converted into a fore-mast; whereby probably the vessel was preserved with all her crew; for her masts were before too lofty, and had they gone by the board in the violent hurricanes, which she experienced in doubling Cape Horn, and where it was impossible for one ship to assist another, her loss had been inevitable.

That part of the south continent of America, which is unoccupied by the Spaniards, and extends from their settlements to the Streights of Magellan, bears the name of Patagonia; it is remarkable for being one continued chain of downs, of a light gravelly soil, covered with long coarse grass in many places, and in others quite bare: so free is this tract of land from wood of every sort, a circumstance wherein it differs from every other part of the known globe, that Sir John Narborough, who wintered here in 1670, with a view of prosecuting discoveries, affirms he could not pick up the handle of an hatchet. A few horses and black cattle having been imported by the Spaniards, upon their first settling at Buenos Ayres, these have thriven so prodigiously upon the herbage, and encreased to that degree, that they extend in vast herds over this continent, as far as ever discoveries have been made; being no longer considered as a private property, but taken by whoever chuses to hunt them down, great quantities of the black cattle being yearly destroyed only for their tallow, hides, and tongues; and even the horses are said, by the Indians at least, to be excellent eating: the carcases that are left by the hunters, fall a prey to the wild dogs, which have also multiplied here exceedingly: being imported first by the Spaniards, whom perhaps they left, and ran wild among the cattle, upon finding subsistence so easily to be obtained; for it is plain they are of a breed not originally found in America.

Altho' thousands of these dogs assemble together, there is no fear of their diminishing the number of black cattle, which they have not the courage to attack in herds; so that they content themselves with bringing down a few stragglers, that separate from the rest, or else with the carrion left by the

the

the hunters, who follow the chace on horseback upon beasts trained up thereto; carrying in their hands a thong of good length, with a running knot at the end of it; and of the management of this, they are so much masters, that they never fail of fixing it about the horns of the beast they intend to catch, when they come to a proper distance. The beast when he finds himself entangled, generally runs, but the horse takes care to keep pace with him, and prevents the thong from being too much strained; till a second hunter, who follows the game, throws another noose about his hinder legs, and then the horses setting different ways, the beast is soon overthrown, and each horse keeps upon the stretch, in a contrary direction, till the hunters dismount and secure him as they think proper: much in the same manner are tigers noosed, if we can credit the assertions of some people of established reputation.

Sometimes there are two parties of Indians out together, one of which goes first to bring down the beasts, while the other follows to skin them. Tho' they oftener hamstring and leave them to languish in torment, imagining their anguish will burst the lymphatic vessels, and thereby facilitate the separation of the skins, for which, in a day or two, they return; this barbarous practice has been loudly and justly condemned, particularly by the priests, whose thundering anathemas against the perpetrators of it, have not hitherto been able entirely to suppress it.

There is one peculiar disadvantage in touching upon this part of Patagonia, for which the plenty of fresh provision will not compensate, and that is want of water, which hitherto, has been found only in small quantities; that which is common being brackish and ill tasted, occasioned perhaps

by the nitrous and saline qualities of the land thro' which it flows; however, this inconvenience may probably be removed upon inspection. This continent abounds also with Peruvian sheep; which are extremely shy and hard to be taken. And on the eastern coast there are plenty of seals, with abundance of penguins, and variety of other sea-fowls. There are few inhabitants upon this side of the coast, which at Port St. Julian is not more than a hundred leagues over, whereas in the neighbourhood of Buenos Ayres, where the continent is near four hundred leagues broad, the natives are numerous, and very troublesome to the Spaniards, being brave, active, and spirited; and in manners nearly resembling those gallant Indians of Chili, who have often set the Spanish power at defiance, and still nobly preserve their independence. They are generally excellent horsemen, and extremely expert in the use of all military weapons, fire-arms excepted, the knowlege of which, the Spaniards take all possible precautions to conceal from them. It is very certain that the best step at subverting the Spanish power in America, would be to form a friendship with and give due encouragement, to these Indians and those of Chili. Port St. Julian is remarked by Sir John Narborough as a place producing excellent salt, and that in quantities sufficient to fill a thousand ships, especially in the month of February; however, Mr. Anson did not find this report verified: the salt which his officers found in the salt-pond, being scarce and bad, occasioned perhaps by the more than ordinary wetness of the weather.

The Trial being properly refitted, which occupation had principally detained the squadron at Port St. Julian; the commodore held a council of the principal officers whose health would permit them

them to attend, on board the *Centurion*; when he informed them that his orders were to secure some port in the South-Seas, where the ships of the squadron might careen and refit, and proposed an attack upon Baldivia, the principal frontier of Chili, a proposition to which every member readily assented; in consequence whereof, new instructions were given to the captains of the squadron, importing, that in case of separation, after a ten days cruise off *Nuestra Senora del Secoro*, they were to proceed to forty degrees and forty degrees thirty minutes, and to cruise for fourteen days off the harbour of Baldivia; after which space of time, if they were not joined by the other ships, they were to direct their course to *Juan Fernandez*, and to act according to former orders; each captain being also at the same time enjoined at his peril not to separate from the *Centurion*, beyond the distance of two miles, without an unavoidable necessity.

Matters being thus properly adjusted, the squadron weighed anchor, and stood out to sea on the 27th of February in the morning, when the *Gloucester* not being able easily to purchase her anchor, was obliged to cut her cable, and leave her best bower behind her. And on the 4th of March, the day being remarkably bright and pleasant, she had like to have been set on fire by a spark flying from the forge into some gun-powder and other combustibles, which an officer on board was preparing for the Spanish squadron, whom they were now daily in expectation of meeting; however, this accident happily produced no other effect than that of spreading an alarm among the people, which quickly subsided, with the danger. March the 5th, they first discovered the land of *Terra del Fuego*, whose aspect affords a

prospect the most dreary and uncomfortable that can be imagined; it appears, without the least mixture of earth or mold, like one continued chain of inaccessible rocks, terminating at a prodigious height in innumerable ragged points, cloathed with eternal snow, and the hills whereon they rise seemed to have been cleft asunder, as if by earthquakes; the chasms, horrible to behold, extending thro' the main substance of the rocks almost to the very bottom.

In two days after they opened Streights la Maire, thro' which, tho' seven or eight leagues long, they were hurried by a strong tide, with good weather, and a brisk gale, in about two hours; and as these are commonly reckoned the boundaries of the Atlantic and Pacific ocean, every heart began to cheer up, imagining their dangers almost at an end; and that now they were upon the point of realizing those golden dreams, on which, in imagination, they had feasted so long; and in these delusive hopes they were still more indulged, by the remarkable serenity of the sky, and the calmness of the weather. But scarcely had they attained the southern extremity of the Streights, before these pleasing prospects vanished intirely; the clouds began to gather on every hand, the tide turned furiously against them, the wind shifted about to the southward, and came on in sudden squalls with such violence, that they were obliged to hand their top-sails, and reef their main-sail, while they were driven by the tide six or seven leagues to the eastward of Streights le Maire.

From this day forward, to the end of more than three months, they struggled with perils and distresses, scarcely to be paralleled, from a continued succession of tempestuous weather that surprized the oldest sailors on board, who unanimously confessed

fessed the most violent hurricane they had ever seen, were but inconsiderable gales compared to what they now underwent, from short and mountainous seas; besides the squalls of wind, any one of which, had it chanced to break over the ship, whereof there was perpetual fear, would have inevitably sent her to the bottom.

Amidst these terrors, the ship rolled gunwale-to, with motions so quick and violent, that without the men proved lucky enough to grasp some fixed body, they ran a hazard of being dashed in pieces against her deck or sides; and these concussions killed and disabled many very useful hands: these tempests were rendered still more dreadful from the manner of their approach, which were generally without the least previous notice, after a continued calm; an interval that had emboldened them to venture to make sail with the fore-top-sail set, or the courses double reefed. To augment the distresses which they occasioned, these blasts generally brought with them quantities of snow and sleet, which freezing over the sails and casing the rigging, rendered them apt to snap at the slightest pull, and besides benumbing the limbs of the sailors, often mortified their fingers and toes, so that many of them were disabled from working.

April the 1st, they encountered a storm more dreadful than any they had hitherto met, which breaking over the larboard side of the Centurion, stove her quarter gallery, and considerably damaged her masts and rigging; this was succeeded by another, if possible worse, on the third, wherein the Wager lost her mizen-mast and main-top-sail yard; and the gammon of the bow-sprit, with the fore-stay of the Anna pink were broke, as well as all her masts near coming by the board.

It being now the 13th of April, they all expected by their reckoning in a few days to have

enjoyed some ease in the Pacific ocean; when the hazy weather clearing up a little, and the moon shining out on a sudden, the *Anna* made a signal of seeing land right a-head: it being then not more than two miles distance, had not the wind luckily shifted to west-north-west, whereby they were enabled to stand over to the southward, whereas just before it blew in squalls from the south-west, they had surely been lost upon this shore, which they concluded was that part of *Terra del Fuego*, called by Frezier, in his character of Magellan's Straights, Cape Nois. It was strange indeed how the currents should have driven them so strongly to the eastward; for the whole squadron esteemed themselves upwards of ten degrees more westerly than this land, so that when they imagined they ran down nineteen degrees longitude, they had not in reality advanced half that distance. After the mortifying disappointment of falling in with the coast of *Terra del Fuego*, they stood away to the south-west, with the weather pretty favourable, till April the 24th; in the evening of which, the wind increased from a fresh gale to a prodigious storm, and the weather was so very thick, that the whole squadron separated; nor did they meet again till they reached *Juan Fernandez*. In the mean time to add to their other disasters, the scurvy began to make such a progress among them, that on board the *Centurion* only, it carried off forty-three men in the month of April, and double that number in May.

The many different shapes in which this destructive disorder, so commonly felt upon long voyages, attacks the human body, are as strange and unaccountable as its symptoms are various and inconstant; it is generally attended with swelled legs, putrid gums, strange dejection of spirits, shiverings,

shiverings, and tremblings, with a disposition to be seized with unaccountable terrors upon the slightest accident: it opened the wounds of an old marine in such a manner as if they had never been healed, tho' they had been fifty years closed; where a leg had been formerly broken and afterwards consolidated, it dissolved the calosity of the bone, and the fracture appeared as it had never been cured. Again, some of the sailors, who, tho' confined to their hammocks, discoursed with a loud strong tone of voice, having good stomachs, and a chearful disposition, were found dead upon an attempt made to move them to a different quarter; and others, who confiding in imaginary strength, have left their hammocks, resolving to go upon deck, have expired in the way; while upon deck itself, nothing was more common than to see the men drop dead, upon a violent effort of duty.

However, having now weathered Cape Horn, and the inhospitable rocks of Terra del Fuego, they indulged themselves with hoping to find a cessation of their trouble in the Pacific ocean. But even here they were deceived; for on the 8th of May they arrived off the island Secoro, in which station they cruized for several days, in hope of being joined by some of the scattered ships, but to no purpose; nor was this disappointment their only uneasiness, for they were utterly ignorant of the coast, which wore a most rugged appearance, and whereon they feared daily being driven by the westerly winds which blow here almost constantly; and their escaping being wrecked upon it, is next to a miracle.

The squalls of wind were generally very severe, accompanied with light showers of rain, loud claps of thunder, and flashes of lightning, one of which in sweeping over the deck, went off
like

like the explosion of a pistol, leaving behind it a sulphureous smell, and wounding several men and officers by whom it passed. It would swell this narrative to an huge volume, should we pretend to enumerate the disasters, fatigues, and terrors which they sustained even upon this coast, till the 24th of May; when they were once more assailed by a tempest, more terrible than any they had hitherto undergone, for now the elements seemed absolutely to have conspired to their destruction; almost all their sails were split, their rigging destroyed, and a mountainous wave breaking over them on the larboard quarter, shifted their ballast and stores; so that the vessel heaved two streaks to port, while her masts were every instant expected to come by the board.

However, the wind abating, they began to exert themselves in stirring up their shrouds, reeving new lanyards, and mending their sails; during which operation they were driving ashore on the island of Chiloe; but the wind happily shifting to the southward, they steered off land with only a main-sail, there being no body left to manage the helm but the master and the reverend Mr. Walter, the commodore's chaplain; the rest being all busied in securing the masts and bending the sails. This was the last stormy weather they met with hereabouts, for that day they got clear of the land; and after a fortnight's cruize, without any of the other ships coming up, the weather being pretty moderate, they bore away for Juan Fernandez, it being the only chance left them to avoid perishing at sea, and the most probable place they could think of whereat to refit and recover the sick; for tho' Baldivia had been the appointed rendezvous, it was no more thought of, the only hope now cherished

on board being that of saving the ship and the few remaining lives.

At last, after various perplexing circumstances, they gained the island on the 9th of June, in a most desponding condition, with a scarcity of fresh water, a crew so disabled with disorders, that not more than ten men could be mustered on a watch to do duty, and even some of these lame and unable to go aloft. It were injustice to the knowledge and skill of Mr. Anson, should we omit to observe that had his directions been pursued, they would have made their desired port on the 28th of May; but his opinion was over-ruled by the majority of officers, whereby the ship continued twelve days longer at sea than she would have otherwise done; and she lost between seventy and eighty men, which, had his advice been taken, might undoubtedly have been saved.

C H A P. III.

Some account of the island of Juan Fernandez: of the measures pursued by Mr. Anson there: the Tryal, the Gloucester, and the Anna pink also make this island: a short review of the various distresses they had previously endured: an account of the loss of the Wager, and the various adventures of her surviving crew, till their arrival in England.

THE island of Juan Fernandez is placed by Mr. Anson in south-latitude thirty-three degrees forty minutes; but by Dampier in thirty-four degrees forty-five minutes, and when first discovered, appears to be surrounded with craggy, broken, precipices; but upon a nearer approach, this uncouth prospect changes into a landscape the most beautiful that can be imagined; and tho' it

must be at any time pleasing to the eye, yet the delight was infinite which the few surviving sailors enjoyed from the sight of a land covered with woods, interspersed with carpets of the loveliest verdure, watered with numerous streams, and wanton cascades, which even at a distance refreshed and revived those who before were dying of thirst. The northern side of this island is composed of a range of craggy hills covered with aromatic trees, none whereof are of size to yield any considerable timber; the largest among them is the myrtle, whose top grows circularly with as much uniformity as if it was clipped by art; and the bark of it yields an excrement, in taste and smell like garlic, instead whereof it was used by the people of the Centurion; but even this tree will not cut to more than a length of forty feet. The pimento and cabbage-tree also grow here, but in no great plenty; and the commodore sowed plums, apricots, and peaches, which have since thriven exceedingly: the trees cannot take any deep root, for the soil is loose, gravelly, and so shallow, that a sailor, pursuing a goat, happened to slip upon a declivity, and to save himself caught hold of a large tree, which gave way and fell with him, as did another of still more considerable bulk, which he also grasped in his fall; so that he was dashed to pieces amongst the rocks. An accident of near the same nature had like to have happened to Mr. Brett.

It has been observed, that some of these hills of Juan Fernandez resemble those in Chili, the bowels of which teem with gold; and there are others of a bright red soil, more beautiful than vermilion, the uses of which perhaps it might be found to supply upon trial. Purslain, water-creffes, wild sorrel, turnips, Sicilian radishes, and many other vegetables, particularly such as are best adapted to
the

the cure of the scurvy, abound every where on the island, whose numerous beauties must enchant every person that has a taste for simple nature's handy-work, her efforts here far surpassing the elegance of labouring art. Few parts of the globe can perhaps equal in dignity and grandeur, many scenes to be met with among the hills, whose openings present to the enraptured view, vallies infinitely charming, where the shade and fragrance of the neighbouring woods, the loftiness of the over-hanging rocks, the frequent falls of the surrounding streams, and the transparency of the waters form a retreat more pleasing than poet ever fabled.

A sylvan scene,

For nature here

Wantons as in her prime, and plays at will
Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.

Mean while the murmuring waters fall
Down the slope hills dispersed, or in a lake,
That to the fringed bank, with myrtle crown'd,
Her chrystal mirror holds. MILTON.

The abundance of goats which former navigators are said to have found upon this island, have been much diminished by the dogs set ashore here for that purpose by the Spaniards, to deprive the buccaneers of the advantages which they reaped from their numbers, whereby they were supplied with plenty of provisions. Among some such of these animals as fell into the hands of the Centurion's men, there were found two or three of most venerable aspect, which from having their ears slit, they supposed to have formerly belonged to Mr. Selkirk.* The dogs having encreased ex-

* See the account of Mr. Selkirk, in the voyage of Woodes Rogers.

ceedingly, have made themselves masters of all the accessible parts of the island; while the few surviving goats maintain the high grounds, and secure the narrow passes by a constant guard. Mr. Walter, in his account of this voyage, tells us, that he saw a troop of dogs endeavouring to gain a hill, on the top whereof there was a large flock of goats; and that the leader of them, followed by the rest, upon the first approach of the dogs, marched to a defile, by which only the eminence could be attained, and there posting himself, like another Leonidas defending his Thermopyle, resolutely waited the onset, which the dogs did not chuse to make; but lay down panting for breath, at the distance of about twenty yards: and after having rested themselves, and reconnoitred the foe, they thought it best to march back to the destruction of some young seals, upon which food they now principally subsist, for they certainly can get but few goats; and some of them have been bold enough to attack the human species, for they are of a large daring breed.

The males of the sea-lions, which animal, during the winter, covers all the sea coast, have furious battles about their mates; and he may be justly pronounced the best warrior among them, who is surrounded with most females. The hearts and tongues of them are most delicious food, and they are so very fat, that one of them has been known to yield a butt of oil.

The bay abounds with plenty of delicious fish, but more particularly with a sort of cray-fish, weighing eight or nine pounds apiece; and there were formerly a great number of cats here, but these have been destroyed by the dogs; as have the pardela, a sort of bird that used to burrow in the ground. Besides the hawk, the owl, the black-bird,

bird, and the humming-bird, not many of the winged species are to be met with on this island.

We ought to have remarked before that the sea-lion, or lioness, is a creature extremely fond of its mate; and there was an instance of this in one of the latter attacking a sailor, who was carelessly skinning her companion, whom he had killed; and the beast having contrived to get the poor fellow's head in her mouth, scored it in several places with her teeth, wounding him thereby so desperately that he died in two or three days after.

The ship was no sooner brought into a safe birth upon this island, than measures were taken for erecting tents a-shore for the reception of the sick, the number of whom amounted to one hundred and sixty-seven persons, twelve or fourteen whereof died on being exposed to the fresh air. There was a necessity for removing the greatest part of them, for they were quite helpless, in their hammocks, a work of considerable fatigue, in which Mr. Anson, with his usual chearfulness and humanity, as well as his officers, bore an equal part. It will not be amiss to observe that so inveterate was this disorder which raged among them, that it did not abate of its fury in less than twenty days after the landing of the crew, but they continued, during the first ten or twelve days, to bury six or seven of their people daily; and this horrible disease seemed as if it had resolved that no force should displace it.

Previous measures being settled for the recovery of the sick, their next care was to purge and cleanse the ship thoroughly; which was become extremely loathsome; and that employment being properly ended, they proceeded with all possible expedition to lay in their wood and water; in which they made the more haste as they feared the return of Pizarro's Squadron, which it was plain, from the heaps of fresh ashes and scattered fragments of fish bones,

bones, had been lately here, and it was impossible that Mr. Anson should be as yet acquainted with that officer's melancholly condition; and Mr. Anson, in his present circumstances, with only thirty hands to man a sixty gun ship, was certainly not a match for any ship of force. In order to make the more dispatch, the smiths and sail-makers were set to work upon mending the chain-plates and decayed work, as well as the sails and damaged rigging.

We should have premised, that a few days after the Centurion had arrived here, the Tryal sloop appeared in sight, and was brought into harbour with the help of some men dispatched to her assistance in the long-boat by Mr. Anson, having only three men, besides captain Saunders, her commander, and her lieutenant, able to stand to the sails, having thrown thirty-four of her hands overboard in this run, and the rest being down in the scurvy.

On the 21st of June the Gloucester was discovered to the leeward, making the best of her way for the island, tho' they were not convinced of her identity till the 26th, when she appeared full in view, and the commodore straightway dispatched his long-boat on board her with a supply of fresh water and vegetables, whereof she stood in prodigious need; for without this timely aid her people had certainly expired thro' thirst, being put to an allowance of a pint of water each man per day, and at that rate having not more left than what would have served them twenty-four hours. It was the misfortune of this vessel to continue driving off and on, till July the 23^d, sometimes out of sight of the land, in the greatest distress imaginable, and the most imminent danger of foundering. These difficulties were occasioned by the winds and currents setting strongly against her: however she at last made the north-

west point of the bay, with a flowing sail, and in an hour came to a safe anchor, at a time when the people on board began almost to despair of ever gaining land, or seeing an end of their calamities but in death.

These two ships, and the Anna pink, which arrived here about the middle of August, being a welcome sight, because of the provisions which she carried, were the only vessels that ever joined the squadron; for the Severn and the Pearl, having been parted from the commodore off Cape Horn, with difficulty reached Brazile, whence they made the best of their way back to Europe. We shall speak shortly more largely of the adventures of the Wager, which ship was run a-shore on a desolate island, where she was lost; but first we shall detain the reader a few moments with a view of the adventures of the Anna before she reached this island. This vessel fell in with land in forty-five degrees fifteen minutes south latitude, at the distance of four leagues, on the 16th of May; on the first sight of which they wore ship, and stood to the southward; but their foretop-sail splitting, a hard gale at west south-west drove them towards the shore, which she was unable, and some say the captain was unwilling, to avoid, hoping for shelter and refreshment among the many islands then in sight. In about four hours she dropped anchor off the island of Inchin; but neither being near enough the east shore, nor yet having a sufficiency of hands to veer away the cable briskly, they continued to drive for two days, till they came within a mile of land, whereon they expected every moment to be wrecked; when on a sudden they came to the side of a small gut, which running between the island and the main, afforded excellent anchorage in smooth water, and a security against all weathers. This was a happy change for a crew which the hour before had

given themselves up for lost, without any hope of being preserved, for their boats were leaky; and, should they chance to reach the shore, they feared falling a prey to the savage disposition which the Spanish historians award to the natives of the climate; and even now this terror remained with them, tho' but ill founded, as appears from their not meeting one native during their stay upon the island: the only human creature, besides themselves, that they had sight of here, being an Indian, with his wife and two young children, who came into the harbour in a perriagua, having with them a dog, a cat, a fishing-net, a hatchet, a knife, a reel with worsted, a flint and steel, a cradle, some roots of a yellow hue and insipid taste, used by them instead of bread, and some barks of trees wherewith to cover their huts.

The master of the pink had them brought on board in his yawl, and detained them lest they should have discovered him to some enemy, using them with great good nature, and permitting them all the day the free use of the deck, but at night locking them up in the fore-castle; he fed them with the same victuals that were given the ship's crew, and sometimes indulged them with a little brandy, of which liquor they were very fond. This Indian was a man of good natural parts, dexterous in making himself understood by signs, and to all appearance extremely kind and docile; and after he had been a good while captive, he made his escape with his wife and family, by getting thro' the scuttle, one night that he found it unnailed, into the yawl, wherewith he rowed a-shore, having first turned the long boat and his own perriagua a-drift, which the crew found it difficult to recover. Had this sagacity and resolution extended to a more enlarged object than that of a single family, the fame of this man had been immortalized; and his late masters
did

did so much justice to his merit, that they left provisions for him in places from whence they supposed he took it, as it was soon gone; and this kind office they daily repeated. His escape, however, influenced them to precipitate their departure, fearing he should discover them either to the Spaniards or to some of the barbarous inhabitants; of the latter particularly they were under violent apprehensions. It was on this occasion the master of the pink was persuaded to cease firing the evening gun; a practice to which he had hitherto constantly adhered, out of an ostentatious imitation of a man of war at setting the watch: but he was at length convinced that concealment was his best security, and that this bravado might prove his destruction. His delay at Inchin was not long after this accident; for having taken in his wood and water, he made the best of his way to Juan Fernandes.

The master of the pink not having taken an exact observation, was not able to ascertain the latitude of this island; however, it seems to be one of the Chonos islands, which extends all along that coast, according to the Spanish accounts; and it is very probable that it borders upon forty-five degrees thirty minutes south latitude. Here are two good coves, where ships may conveniently heave down in secure shelter. Several streams of excellent fresh water fall into the harbour, and one of them is so luckily situated, that casks out of it standing in the long-boat maybe filled with an horse. Tho' it was winter when the Anna pink was upon this island, the air was mild, and the ground covered with a beautiful verdure, yielding nettle-tops, wild celery, and other refreshing vegetables: the fresh-water rivers abound with excellent mullets; and cockles and muscles of an extraordinary large size are found in great plenty upon the sea-coast: these are a food extremely delicious, as are also the geese, snags, and penguins,

penguins, of which there are plenty enough farther inland.

With respect to making discoveries up the country, this could not possibly be expected from a crew of not more than sixteen or seventeen persons, ignorant of the coast, and labouring under perpetual apprehensions of being attacked by an enemy.

Having brought the *Anna pink*, the *Trial*, and the *Gloucester* back to the commodore, and taken notice of the course pursued by the *Pearl* and *Severn*, it now remains for us to give some account of the *Wager*, and her various distresses, after being divided from the rest of the squadron off Cape Boir. The *Wager* was commanded by captain Cheap, who was extremely solicitous about reaching *Baldivia*, having on board some few field pieces, coehorns, and other kind of military stores, besides pioneers tools; all which implements would have been much wanted in case the projected attack upon that place had been adhered to. These considerations induced the captain, in spite of the ship's distresses, to make the best of his way to the first rendezvous of *Secoro*, whence he intended to have steered for *Baldivia*, in case he missed of the squadron at the first mentioned place.

This was his determined resolution, when, on the morning of the 14th of May, he fell in with land in south latitude forty-seven degrees, of which exerting himself to get clear he fell down and dislocated his shoulder, whereby he was rendered incapable of acting; and the crew not taking proper pains to work her off the coast, she struck on a sunken rock, and soon after bulged and grounded between two small islands, about a musket-shot from shore. The confusion produced by this accident was inconceivably heightened by the rebellious disposition of the crew, who imagining the loss of the ship destroyed the captain's superiority,

and

and put them all on an equal footing, fell to rifling her stores and drinking her liquors, without any attention to their calamitous condition. In this situation many of them got so drunk that they were drowned by the water flowing into the wreck at a time when they were incapable of retreating; a proceeding against which the captain, and some of the soberer people, had admonished them before hand to no purpose: and so far were they transported by their unaccountable frenzy, that some of those, who had staid on board out of obstinacy, being afraid of the vessel's parting, with the weather, which was next day very stormy, pointed a four pounder from the quarter-deck, against the hut wherein they supposed captain Cheap to be sheltered, which they fired at and very narrowly missed; and all this because the boat, which they had before rejected, did not put off to their assistance so soon as they expected upon a signal for it being hung out: nay, so very mutinous was their disposition, that there was no possibility of husbanding such provisions as could be saved out of the wreck, or of making a proper division thereof; for there was nothing but frauds, concealments, and thefts among them, which were productive of eternal discords.

Another important point was the captain differing with almost all his people in opinion concerning the measures to be pursued in the present exigency. The common resolution of the malecontents was to lengthen the long-boat, and accompanied by the other boats to steer to the southward, and passing Magellan's Streights to endeavour to gain the coast of Brazile, whence they supposed they should easily find conveyance to Great Britain. However hazardous this attempt appeared, it presented a dawning hope of their being able to reach their own country once again; which reviving circumstance outweighed every other consideration.

The captain's design was of a quite different nature; his intention being to fit up the boats in the best manner possible, and to proceed with them to the northward, where, as he had above one hundred men in good health, with some fire-arms and ammunition, he did not fear seizing upon some Spanish vessel, as there was almost a certainty of meeting with many in the neighbourhood of Chiloe or of Baldivia; and then he intended to proceed to Juan Fernandez, which island it appeared probable to him could be made with the boats only, even if they should fail taking a prize. This project was always foremost in the captain's thoughts, and led him underhand to obstruct as much as in him lay the measures of his opponents, wherewith however he appeared outwardly to comply. The following unhappy accident fell out in the interim, that considerably heightened their dissensions. A midshipman of the name of Cozens, who had involved himself in broils with most of the officers, and several times insulted even the captain himself, took upon him to abuse the purser, close to the captain's tent, for stopping the allowance of a lazy fellow who had refused to work. The dispute was productive of high words and very scurrilous language, especially on the side of Cozens, at whose insolent behaviour the purser, growing enraged, cried out, A mutiny, a mutiny, the dog has pistols; at the same time he fired a pistol himself, the report of which being heard by the captain, he rushed out of his tent, and not doubting but it was Cozens who had fired, shot him thro' the head instantly; and the wound proved mortal, for it killed him at the end of fourteen days. This action, for some time, rendered the crew more submissive than before; but about the middle of October, when the boats were almost ready to sail, the majority of them put the captain under a guard, pretending they would carry him prisoner

prisoner to England, there to be tried for murder: but when they were just ready for sea, they shewed that they had never intended this measure, by setting him at liberty, and leaving to him, and the few who chose to partake of his fortune, only the yawl, to which the barge was afterwards added, because the people on board her were prevailed on to return back. Out of one hundred and thirty men that survived the wreck of the Wager, thirty died during their stay upon this island, for such in the end it proved to be, and not part of the continent, as had been first imagined.

The number that embarked in the long-boat and the cutter for the southward were eighty, who, at their going off, gave the captain and his company, consisting of nineteen persons, three cheers: this was on the thirteenth of October, five months after the loss of the Wager; and on the 29th of January following these adventurers arrived at Rio Grande, on the Brazile coast, having lost the cutter, and being reduced from eighty to thirty persons, and those in the greatest misery thro' want of food and water. The captain, and the companions of his misfortunes, were not able, thro' the badness of the weather and other intervening difficulties, to fit their barge and yawl for their expedition northward till the 14th of December; and they had scarcely been an hour at sea, before the winds blew a hurricane, and the waves ran so very high that they were obliged to throw overboard most of the provisions they had saved from the wreck, to prevent their going to the bottom.

This hardship retarded their progress considerably, as they were thereby necessitated to make every shore they could possibly reach to procure themselves subsistence; moreover their yawl sunk as she lay at anchor with one of their hands on board who was drowned; and there not being room

sufficient on board the barge to stow her complement of men, they were forced to leave four marines behind them on a desolate shore. Notwithstanding this chain of disasters, they continued to push to the northward till the end of January; when having made three unsuccessful attempts at doubling a head-land, supposed by them to be Cape Tres Montes, they put back, almost in despair, to their former birth, which they had named Wager Island, and came up with it in the middle of the month of February. Disheartened at their repeated disappointments, and quite worn out with hunger and fatigue, here they were seasonably relieved by several pieces of beef which had been lately washed out of the wreck, and still swam upon the water. Soon after this piece of good fortune, two canoes came among them, on board one of which was a native of Chiloe, who understanding a little Spanish, was induced by Mr. Elliot, the surgeon, who spoke the language, to consent to transport captain Cheap and his people to Chiloe; in consideration of which kindness he was to have the barge and all that belonged to her. Accordingly, on the 6th of March, eleven persons, to which the company was now reduced, embarked on board the barge; but after a few days voyage, six of them, together with an Indian, went off in this little vessel, leaving ashore the captain, lieutenant Hamilton of the marines, Mr. Elliot the surgeon, the honourable Mr. Byron and Mr. Campbell, two midshipmen; who were in a most disconsolate condition, on a dreary barren coast, without provision or the smallest means of procuring any; for their arms, their ammunition, and every little convenience of which they had been masters, were carried off in the barge. They now saw a near completion of their calamities, and nothing but a prospect of inevitable destruction, when the Indian,

dian, with whom they had bargained to convey them to Chiloe, returned with his canoe. It seems he had been out a-fishing, and left the barge in care of another Indian, whom it was very probable the sailors had forced out to sea.

This honest Indian, when he first missed the barge and his companion, concluded that he had been murdered; but being at length satisfied of the contrary, he adhered to his former promise of conveying captain Cheap and the four gentlemen along with him to some of the Spanish settlements, promising to supply them with provisions enough all the way; for no persons are better skilled in fishing and fowling than the Indians. For these purposes he provided several of his neighbours in other canoes; with whom the captain embarked, together with his four companions, one of whom, viz. Mr. Elliot, the surgeon, died in the passage. It was the middle of March when they left Wager Island, and about the beginning of June they arrived at the island of Chiloe, where the Spaniards treated them with great humanity. Lieutenant Hamilton was by some accident left behind in the way, and did not arrive here till the latter end of August.

To such an ill state of health were these four gentlemen reduced by their various distresses, that it was not without great difficulty they recovered, nature being almost worn out on their arrival here.

From Chiloe they were transmitted to Valparaiso, and thence to St. Jago, the capital of Chili, where, after having continued about a year, captain Cheap, lieutenant Hamilton, and Mr. Byron, were allowed to embark for Europe on board a French ship, upon the news of a cartel being settled between Great-Britain and Spain; but Mr. Campbell having turned roman-catholic at Buenos Ayres, returned to Spain with Pizarro in the Asia; but failing of his endeavours to procure himself a commission in that

service at the court of Madrid, he returned to England, hoping to be again reinstated in the British navy; however, his proceedings among the Spaniards were too recent to admit of his meeting success in that attempt. This gentleman has published a defence of his conduct, together with a memorial of his sufferings; and I think he has since that time obtained a commission in the royal navy of Portugal.

CH A P. III.

The Tryal sloop sent in search of the Severn and Pearl to Masafuero; no news of them; Masafuero described; the Anna pink is broke up; an enumeration of the losses of the Centurion, the Gloucester, and the Tryal; several prizes taken; the Tryal condemned as unfit for service, and sunk; her name given to a prize; Mr. Anson's tenderness of his prisoners; an attempt upon Paita resolved upon.

COMMODORE Anson imagining that either the Pearl or the Severn might touch at Masafuero, in sight of which the Gloucester had been, before she made Juan Fernandes, dispatched the Tryal to enquire into the truth of his suspicions; and she returned, after having sailed quite round the island without having gained the smallest intelligence whatsoever concerning them. Masafuero has been always represented by the Spaniards, who call it the Lesser Fernandes, as a barren rock, without wood, water, or provision of any kind. But this appears to be a political falsity, asserted to prevent hostile vessels from touching here. It bears from the Greater Juan Fernandes west by south, at the distance of twenty-two leagues; is covered with trees, exhibits several fine streams of fresh-water, and

and abounds with goats, which, not having been often chased, are easily brought down. The shore is bespread with seals and sea-lions, and on the north side there is anchorage in deep water, where in case of necessity a single ship may find shelter close under the shore; tho' the convenience thereof cannot be boasted of, as it lies exposed to all winds but the south. The latter part of the month of August was spent in unloading the provisions of the *Anna pink*, which vessel, upon a scrutiny of all the carpenters, was judged unable to live upon the water; wherefore, upon a petition of Mr. Gerrard, her master, to the commodore, she was purchased, with all her furniture, for the use of the squadron, at the rate of three hundred pounds, to be paid to her owners. And her crew, consisting of ten men and the master, were entered on board the *Gloucester*, which ship had but eighty-two sailors remaining alive, out of three hundred that she brought out of England; two, out of forty-eight marines, and every one of her invalids were perished. The *Centurion*, since her leaving St. Helens to this time, had buried two hundred and ninety-two of her hands, and had now remaining on board two hundred and fourteen. She had lost forty-six out of fifty invalids; and sixty-eight out of seventy-nine marines, officers included: so that upon a computation it appears that these three ships, which brought out of England nine hundred and sixty-one men, had amongst them all, in September 1741, only three hundred and thirty-five people left alive, boys included: a number scarcely sufficient to man the *Centurion*, and at the best scarcely sufficient, with the utmost effort of their strength, to navigate the three ships.

The season for navigating in this climate being now near at hand, every body exerted himself in preparing the ships for sea, all hands being busied

for this purpose. About eleven in the morning of the 8th they discovered a sail, which the Centurion, being in most forwardness, made after as fast as possible; but losing her track in the night, they kept on a south-east course, in hope of coming up with her, as they supposed her bound to Valparaiso; but not getting sight of her again they resolved to steer back to Juan Fernandes; when, about three in the morning of the 12th, a brisk gale springing up at west south-west, obliged them to lie upon a north-west tack, which, to their agreeable surprise, brought them, upon the break of the morning, in sight of a sail, at about five leagues distance, but not the same they had seen before. She appeared to be a large ship; and upon her hoisting Spanish colours, and bearing upon the Centurion, the commodore ordered every thing ready for an engagement; but upon nearer approach she appeared to be a merchant, without a single tier of guns, who had mistaken the commodore for her consort. She surrendered at the fire of only four shot, and Mr. Saumerez, the Centurion's first lieutenant, was ordered to take possession, and to send all the prisoners, beginning with the officers and passengers, on board the commodore. She was called the *Nuestra Senora de Monte Carmelo*; her cargo consisted of sugar, and large quantities of coarse blue cloth manufactured at Quito, together with some indifferent tobacco and a few chests of wrought plate and dollars, weighing about two hundred pounds avoirdupoise: her burthen was four hundred tons: she was manned with fifty-three sailors, black and white, and bound from Callao to Valparaiso. The intelligence received from the prisoners on board this prize was of the greatest consequence to the English squadron; for by this they first learned part of the fate of Pizarro's squadron, as also that the viceroy of Mexico had just

taken

taken off an embargo that had been laid upon all shipping in those seas, supposing that the English squadron, of whom he had not lately received any news, must certainly have perished in doubling Cape Horn, the apprehensions of which enemy had solely occasioned the embargo. They also now learned, that had they made Juan Fernandes, when in reality they first discovered it, May the 28th, they had certainly fallen in with some Spanish ships which had been fitted out by the viceroy of Peru, and sent thither to cruize, in expectation of catching such of them as might chance to escape round Cape Horn; and that these vessels had not quitted their station till the 6th of June, when they gave the English up for lost and returned to Calao; so that this delay, which had formerly appeared so terrible a misfortune, occasioning the loss of near eighty men, was in reality a great piece of good luck, and the absolute cause of preserving the ship and the surviving crew. It appearing, by letters on board this prize, that several other merchantmen were now at sea between Callao and Valparaíso, Mr. Anson having reinforced the Tryal sloop with ten of his own hands, sent her to cruize off the last mentioned port; and at the same time ordering the Gloucester, captain Mitchel commander, to proceed to south latitude fifty degrees, and cruize off the island of Paita till he should be joined by the commodore; and the better to enable her for this run, he put on board her twenty-three sailors and six passengers from the Carmelo, which he also fitted out as a cruizer with four six pounders, the same number of four pounders, and two swivels.

September 19, the Centurion and her prize, weighed from the bay of Juan Fernandes, to make her course to the eastward, intending to join the Tryal off Valparaíso. On the 24th in the evening,

they came with her, having at first taken her for an enemy, and prepared to engage. They found she had taken a prize of six hundred tons burthen, with much such a cargo as that of the Carmelo, and about five thousand pounds in ready money. But to counterbalance this success, the Tryal's main top-mast came by the board, and she had the ill luck to spring both her main and fore-mast. Besides these mortifying circumstances, the wind blew so hard, and there was such a hollow sea, that there was no possibility of assisting her; nor yet was she to be left in such unhappy circumstances. During this embarrassment, it is certain that several considerable prizes must certainly have escaped them. The weather proving more moderate on the 27th, the captain of the Tryal came on board the Centurion, bringing with him an instrument subscribed by himself and all his officers, setting forth that the vessel was so leaky and defective, that it was of the utmost hazard of their lives they staid on board her, for that at the next foul weather squall there could be no hope of keeping her above water, unless she were repaired in such a manner, as their present situation could not possibly admit of; wherefore the commodore having ordered every thing useful out of her on board the prize she had taken, together with captain Saunders and her crew, she was scuttled and sunk. This necessary business being dispatched, captain Saunders proceeded in the Tryal's prize to her station of the north north-west point of Valparaíso, attended by lieutenant Saumarez in the Centurion's prize; while the Centurion herself bore away to the southward, with a view of cruising for some days to the windward of Valparaíso, from thence she intended to proceed to Pisco or Nasca, which the commodore named as a place of rendezvous.

The various delays they had met were of such bad consequence, that it was the 5th of November before they could discover any thing like a sail; about this time, however, they fell in with and seized a ship, burthen three hundred tons, bound from Guiaquil to Callao; and laden with timber, cacao, coco, hides, pito-thread made of a strong species of grass, wax, Quito-cloth, and about one hundred and seventy pounds in money: she was called the Santa Teresa de Jesus, and had forty-five sailors on board, ten passengers, four men, three women, and three black slaves. Mr. Dennis the third lieutenant of the Centurion was sent with sixteen men in the boat to take possession of her; and by his courteous humane behaviour he soon convinced them that their notions of being fallen into the hands of buccaneers and pyrates was very ill-grounded; for they had laboured under terrible apprehensions of ill usage; and though the women were all extremely agreeable, and the youngest of them particularly handsome, they did not meet the slightest rudeness from the sailors; but by the commodore's positive order, had the free use of their apartments, slaves, and necessaries, with every other conveniency that could possibly be afforded them: he also permitted the pilot, who is the second person on board every Spanish ship, and a sort of guardian to the women, to continue with them: this man had at first pretended to be the husband of the handsomest of these ladies, but it was only an honest fraud, calculated to preserve her from being ill used; and to do justice to their sagacity, they were very sensible of the benevolence, tenderness, and polite behaviour of the commodore, upon whom they begged leave to wait at the time that he afterwards gave them their liberties, that they might personally assure him of their gratitude, and their deep sense of the

favours he had conferred upon them. We should not forget to observe that all the prisoners, upon their first falling into the hands of the English, appeared in the greatest dejection imaginable, expecting nothing but the most barbarous treatment, in a belief whereof much pains must certainly have been taken to ground them; for they even acknowledged that after having experienced the politeness of Mr. Anson's behaviour, and his extreme beneficence, they for some time could scarcely credit their own feelings; so strong was their prepossession. Among the rest there was a lad of about seventeen, son to the vice-president of Chili, who imagining that he was become a slave for life to a most brutal race, lamented the being separated from his parents, his country, and his friends, in the most pathetic terms; yet when this youth had been some time on board, the civility with which every body used him, and the care the commodore took of him, had such an effect upon him, that he declared he would have been content to have spent his life with Mr. Anson. It would be doing injustice to most of the prisoners not to mention that after they went a-shore they were loud in praise of their captors; and a jesuit of some distinction, who had been a prisoner on board one of the prizes, omitted no opportunity of paying his tribute of thanks to the commodore, by every where publishing the nobleness of his behaviour; adding, that his usage of the men would always call for the best acknowledgement; but his honourable behaviour to the women was extraordinary even beyond belief.

The commodore here ordered the boats to be repaired, there being timber enough in the last prize; and to facilitate their boarding an enemy's vessel, in case of necessity, he ordered a swivel gun-stock to be fixed in the bow, both of the barge and of the pinnace. About this time, being in
eight

eight degrees or thereabouts, the sea for many miles round was covered with the spawn of fish, which gave it the colour of the finest vermilion; and flying fish and bonitos begun to grow plenty, being the first they had seen since they left the coast of Brazile. November 10, lying off the southernmost islands of Lobos de la Mar, at the distance of three leagues, looking out for the Gloucester, who had been appointed her station hereabouts; they discovered a sail, which lieutenant Brett, with the Tryal's pinnace and barge, were ordered to chase. There being but little wind stirring, and it plainly appearing that this ship was not the Gloucester, the lieutenant soon came up with and boarded her; she was called the Nuestra Senora del Carmin, Marcos Morena, a Venetian, commander: She was bound from Panama to Callao, having touched at Païta for water, with a cargo of steel, iron, wax, pepper, cedar plank, snuff, rosarios, European bale goods, powder blue, cinnamon, Romish indulgencies, and other pieces of merchandize, of little value to the captors; but if considered with regard to the loss it might be to the Spaniards, was a considerable capture; the cargo having cost, at the first hand, upwards of four hundred thousand pounds.

On board of this ship there was an Irishman, whose name was John Williams; he had travelled as a pedlar all over the kingdom of Mexico, and made a great deal of money, which he had lost again by some mischance; this man had been for some time confined in the jail of Païta for a misdemeanor, and expressed great joy at falling in with his countrymen. From him they learned, that upon a ship's having being chased in the offing of Païta, a few days before, by a vessel supposed to be the Gloucester, the governor of that town, apprehensive of a visit, together with the royal officer, were removing

moving their own, and the king's treasure to Piura, a town fourteen leagues within land : Williams also told them, that there was a large sum of money belonging to the merchants, lodged in the custom-house, and that it was intended to be shipped the following day, on board a light clean vessel, the bottom of which was newly primed ; which vessel was bound to Sonsonate on the coast of Mexico, to purchase part of the cargo of of the Manila ship.

This piece of intelligence, immediately determined the commodore to endeavour to surprize the place without a moment's delay ; as he was fully satisfied, by an enquiry into the strength and condition of it, that there was little danger of losing many men in the attempt : besides there was a necessity for some step of this sort, as they could hope for no profit by a longer cruize in these seas ; the coast being alarmed of their contiguity ; and this enterprize not only promised a supply of live provision, which they much wanted, but afforded an opportunity of putting the prisoners a-shore, who, being very numerous, made a greater consumption of the ship's stores than she was able to spare.

CHAP. IV.

An account of the taking and destroying the town of Paita.

PAITA lies in five degrees twelve minutes south latitude, on a barren sandy soil, void of water, greens, or any kind of refreshment, a few goats, and some fish excepted ; but of these, however, there are constant supplies brought down upon floats

floats from Colan, a town lying about three leagues to the northward. The water of this place is of a whitish disagreeable aspect; however, it is said to be very wholesome, being strongly impregnated with *sarsaparilla*, wherewith the country through which it runs, is abundantly stocked: Cattle are brought down thither from Piura. Nothing could have induced any persons to settle upon so inclement a spot, but that it is the best bay to be met with on that part of the coast, affording very secure and commodious anchorage. It is the only place at which ships can touch to refresh in their passage to Callao; and the common rendezvous of all vessels from Acapulco, Sonsonate, &c.

This town consists of about two hundred houses, each not more than one story high, the walls being of split cane and mud, and the roofs only a covering of leaves: edifices of this sort, though extremely slight, are quite sufficient for a climate, wherein rain is perfectly unknown: there fell a small quantity in 1728, which was looked upon as a prodigy, and proved the destruction of many buildings. The inhabitants are Indians and black slaves, or at best a mixed breed, but few white men being settled here. The only defence of Paita, at this time, was a fort without either ditch or out-work, but surrounded by a brick wall of little or no strength; in it were mounted eight pieces of cannon, and the garison consisted of but one weak company; though the town was able to arm three hundred men, to what purpose we shall not pretend to say, not having heard that they ever gave any instances of their military capacity. The commodore, after duly weighing the strength of the place, resolved that the attack should be made by the boats; fearing that if he should attempt first bringing the ships into harbour, the Spaniards, apprized of the danger, might take measures for securing their most valuable effects.

The

The attack in this manner meditated, was immediately carried into execution. The barge and pinnaces were manned with fifty-eight choice men well-armed, under the care of Mr. Brett; and to him was left the whole conduct of the expedition. The better to prevent any confusion that might arise from the people's being ignorant of the windings of the town, two Spanish pilots were ordered to guide them, with a promise of being well rewarded; and an assurance to the prisoners, that they should be all here set at liberty, provided these men behaved with fidelity; but on the contrary, it was observed, that in case they failed in the least article of the duty to which they were appointed, they two should be shot, and all the Spaniards now in custody carried prisoners to England. It was particularly remarkable, that one of these pilots had been, about twenty years before, a prisoner with captain Clipperton, who forced him, in the same manner, to guide his men to Truxillo, an inland town to the southward of Païta, which they then surprized and pillaged. While the boats were making for the bay, the mouth of which they reached without being discovered, the ships stood in for the port with all the sail they could. The approach of the sailors in the boats was discovered by some people, on board a ship lying at anchor in the harbour, who got a-shore as quickly as they could, spreading the alarm, by crying out, The English dogs.

Notwithstanding this intelligence, Mr. Brett got a-shore before they could fire two guns from the fort; and drawing up his men under shelter of a narrow street, marched immediately to the parade, with drums beating and loud clamours of joy, where he was received with a volley of small shot from some merchants, who posted themselves in a gallery that ran round the governor's house, but who were soon

soon dislodged, and taking to their heels, left the parade in quiet possession of the invaders, who soon entered both the governor's house and the fort, which they found abandoned; having lost one man, and having had two wounded, one of them being the Spanish pilot of the *Teresa*; the honourable Mr. Kepple, son to the Earl of Albemarle, had a piece of his jockey-cap shaved off close to his temple, by a ball, which however did him no other injury.

— Mr. Brett having secured the fort, the governor's house, and all the avenues of the town, with proper guards, ordered the few inhabitants that were left to be confined in one of the churches under a proper guard; while some stout negroes, escorted by a file of musketeers, were ordered to assist in removing the treasure of the custom-house, &c. to the fort, this being the principal thing to be considered after being possessed of the town.

As most of the inhabitants had fled in their first fright, without staying to dress; the sailors, who could not be prevented from breaking into the houses, to search for private pillage, eagerly seized upon their cloaths, which, according to the fashion of the country, were extremely superb; and throwing these over their greasy jackets, cut so ridiculous a figure, when they appeared before the lieutenant, that he scarcely knew them; and their appearance was still more odd, from many of them having put on women's embroidered gowns, when they had missed of men's cloaths. Early in the morning the Centurion opened the bay, and about twelve o'clock came to an anchor in ten fathom and a half water, at a mile and a half distance from the town.

This and the following day was spent in sending on board the treasure; and boats full of hogs, fowl, and other refreshments, together with the most valuable commodities to be found in the town: and this was done without any molestation from the enemy;

enemy; though a good number of them, among whom were two hundred horse, paraded upon a neighbouring hill very ostentatiously, with all kinds of military music. These were headed by the governor, who had been one of the first that fled, leaving a young wife of about seventeen, to whom he had been but a few days married, to be carried off in her shift by a couple of his people. His escape was a sensible mortification to Mr. Brett, as well as to the commodore; because, had they secured him, they might have got a considerable ransom for the town, there being in it at that time, several ware-houses filled with valuable goods, which were consumed with it, when it was set on fire, upon the governor's refusing to listen to any overtures that were made him for a parley; for though Mr. Anson intimated to him that the town might be preserved at a very trifling expence, he did not deign even to return a civil answer. And having collected a body of forces round the country, whereof however he made no use, he was so fond of his new military command, that he seemed intirely to have forgotten his government. His forces however, as Mr. Anson learned from some negroe deserters, were in great want of water, and though they had, one night, positively resolved to have fallen on his men, headed by a Scotch captain of a ship named Gordon, they were deterred and intimidated there from by the great vigilance and strict look-out of Mr. Brett.

On the fifteenth of November, their business in Païta being pretty well over, the commodore sent all his prisoners, in number eighty-two, ashore, according to his promise; and then Mr. Brett, having made a proper disposition of pitch, tar, and other combustibles, to encrease the flame, set the town on fire in several quarters at the same time; then having spiked up the eight pieces of cannon,

he

he collected his men, there being only one missing, and marched regularly down to the water side; at which time a body of Spaniards upon the hill, put themselves in motion, as if they meant an attack; but upon Mr. Brett's making a halt and facing about, this heroic troop did not judge it safe to advance.

They were now ready to put off from the beach, which was so covered with smoak, as to be almost invisible, when they heard the voice of a man, loudly and pathetically invoking them to take him in; one of the boats made up to the place from whence the sound issued, and there found the man whom they had missed, up to the chin in water, for he could not swim, and had waded as far as he durst. It appeared upon examining into the cause of his delay, that having taken too large a dose of brandy he had fallen asleep, and was wakened only by the fire coming so near as to scorch him. He said, that at first he was strangely amazed to see the houses all in a blaze about him on one side, and several Indians and Spaniards conferring together; however, recollecting his dangerous situation, he pushed through the thickest of the smoke, and arrived upon the beach, barely in time to save himself. It ought to be remarked in honour to the conduct of Mr. Brett, and to the character of the men under his command, that this was the only person among them who was known to be drunk during the expedition; and their behaviour upon the whole was infinitely regular, much beyond what could have been expected from a parcel of rude sailors, who had been so long confined on board of ship, and who are, in general, too much addicted to debauchery.

Lieutenant Brett and his detachment now put off to the ship; the acquisition they made, in wrought plate, dollars, and other coin, amounting to upwards

wards of thirty thousand pounds, exclusive of the broad cloaths, silks, cambricks, velvets, and embroideries, which were destroyed by the flames; besides which the private plunder, such as rings, bracelets, and jewels, the immediate property of the particular captors, were very great: it appeared by a memorial presented to the court of Madrid some time after, that the loss of the Spaniards by this action amounted to half a million of dollars: there being at this time six of the enemy's vessels in harbour, five of them were, by the commodore's order, towed out to sea, where they were scuttled and sunk; and the sixth, being the vessel wherein the treasure was to have been embarked, he added to his own squadron, by the name of the *Solidad*, manning her with ten men, under the command of lieutenant Hughes of the *Tryal* sloop.

CHAP. V.

The squadron sails from Paita; disputes about plunder happily adjusted; they steer for Quibo; the Teresa and Solidad burned; also the Gloucester's prize; the island of Quibo described; some account of the pearl fishery in the bay of Panama; they miss the Acapulco ship; the squadron in want of water; steers for Chequetan; their proceedings, and a description of that harbour; surprizing qualities of the torpedo; they depart for China.

ABOUT midnight, on the 16th of November, Mr. Anson's squadron got under sail: it consisted of six vessels, viz. the *Centurion*, the *Tryal's* prize, the *Carmelo*, the *Carmin*, the *Teresa*, and the *Solidad*; they stood to the westward, and in the morning spread themselves

to look out for the Gloucester, it being near her appointed station. During this cruize, a dispute arose between the men, who had been a-shore at Paita, and those who had remained on board; about the plunder, to share in which the latter maintained they had an absolute right; because their not having been upon the enterprize was a necessary chance, besides which, their presence certainly contributed greatly to facilitate it; and they represented that their duty on board was very laborious, since besides the necessary care of the vessel, they were obliged to be constantly under arms, on account of the many prisoners then in their custody, who outnumbered them; and whom there was a necessity of guarding in the strictest manner, lest at a juncture so very critical, they might have been tempted to form some dangerous attempt. These arguments were strongly opposed by the obstinacy of some, and the selfishness of others, the effects whereof might have been very destructive animosities, if the commodore had not interposed his authority; and having ordered all hands to assemble on the quarter-deck, he thanked those who had been a-shore for their good behaviour, to which he gave proper encomiums: and then reasoned with them in such a manner, as made it plainly appear, that their companions on board had an equal right with them to the plunder. He ordered it all to be brought on deck, where he divided it equally among the whole ship's company in the most impartial manner, giving to every man according to his rank and commission; but as an encouragement to others, who might chance to be employed on the like nature, he gave his own share of the booty to be divided among those who had been upon the attack; by which prudent measures, he soon restored matters to their former channel.

On the morning of the 18th, they gained sight of the Gloucester, and were joined by her about three in the afternoon; she had only taken two prizes, one of which was a snow laden with wine, brandy, and olives, besides about seven thousand pounds in specie; the other a launch, the people on board which, when taken by the Gloucester's barge, were at dinner upon pigeon-pye, on a service of plate; notwithstanding which opulent appearance, they complained of their poverty, having nothing on board but cotton made up in jars, which were all removed into the Gloucester; where, upon a strict examination, it appeared to be a fraudulent package, there being doubloons and dollars hid among the cotton to the amount of twelve thousand pounds, the property of the merchants of Païta.

The Gloucester had, besides these, been in sight of two or three other ships belonging to enemy, one whereof they had reason to believe of prodigious value, but she found it impossible to come up with them.

As the squadron began to want water, the commodore gave orders for proceeding to Quibo, an island in the mouth of the bay of Panama; and having there taken in a supply, he had resolved to steer for the southern parts of California, or the contiguous coast of Mexico, there to cruize for the Manila galley, which they knew to be at this time at sea, on her way to Acapulco, where it was generally the middle of January before she arrived; and it being now only November, they imagined they should be able to gain the road time enough to intercept her, not conceiving the passage would cost them more than a month or five weeks.

They were at this time eight sail in all; but the Santa Teresa and the Solidad moving slowly upon the

the water, and retarding the progress of the rest of the vessels very much, the commodore ordered them to be cleared of every thing useful, and then burned. On the 22d they made the island of Plate; to which land one of the prizes was ordered to stand close in, to discover if any ships lay between that and the continent, and also to look out for a stream of fresh water reported to be there, which, if verified, would have saved them the trouble of going to Quibo; but she returned without having seen any ships, or discovered any water. About three in the afternoon they saw the point of Manta, bearing south-east by east seven miles distant; and here the captain of the Gloucester chose to set some of his prisoners at liberty in the Spanish launch.

Having now passed the equinoctial, they found the climate change from a uniform pleasant temperature, to close sultry weather; with frequent calms and heavy rains; as they drew nearer the Isthmus and quitted the shade of the Cordilleras; which alteration they first imagined to proceed from the neighbourhood of the line; but they were satisfied, from this kind of weather attending them in seven degrees north, that the Vandevals or stormy seasons were not yet ended, notwithstanding what is affirmed by captain Shelvocke and others, of its beginning in June, and ending in November. It now became necessary from the continuance of the rain, to caulk the sides and decks of the Centurion to make her the more staunch.

On the 27th captain Mitchel of the Gloucester, having cleared her prize, by the commodore's order, scuttled and burned her. December the 3d they came in sight of Quibo, where in the evening of the following day they anchored in thirty-three fathom muddy ground; which situation they changed the day after for a rough gravelly bottom
twenty

twenty-two fathom deep; the watering-place bearing three quarters of a mile north-west from the ship. The island of Quibo is pretty lofty except in one place; the whole soil is covered with trees, extending as far as the high water mark, and a stream of fresh water rolls over the sandy beach into the sea; so that the Centurion was able to lay in a sufficient stock of wood and water in two days. A perpetual verdure crowns the glebe, and limes and cassia abound among the woods; wherein are to be found plenty of guanos and monkeys, that are good food, with numbers of deer, that cannot be easily come at; but besides parrots, paroquets, and mackaws, all other birds seem to be strangers to the place. The Spaniards say, that a flying snake is often found here, which clings to the boughs of trees, from whence it takes an opportunity of darting upon man or beast, giving inevitable death with its sting.

Besides these dangerous land animals, the sea is infested with large alligators, and with a flat fish of considerable bigness, which leaps a great height out of the water, and is fatal to the pearl divers, by clasping them in its fins as they rise from the bottom; however, to free themselves from this destructive embrace, they now go armed with a sharp knife; and by sticking it into the belly of the fish, regain their liberty. In most parts of the island the soil is very fertile; and the water, which is excellent, abounds on every hand. There are no inhabitants upon it, but huts erected in several places, perhaps to shelter the pearl-divers, who frequent this island in the summer-season, for the pearl oyster, which is found every where in the bay of Panama, abounds particularly about Quibo; and may in many parts be taken up without any trouble but that of wading. They are very large, but ill-tasted; the pearl partaking of the nature of

the bottom whereon it is found ; so that if the bottom be muddy, the pearl is of a dusky hue. The fishing for them is practised by negroes carefully trained up to the business by the inhabitants of Panama : these poor creatures often stay under water till the blood gushes out of their eyes, ears, and mouth ; an accident which seldom happens a second time ; and, after which they dive with more facility than ever, if the tradition of the country is to be relied upon.

There are vast quantities of turtle along the coast, some of which may be often met fast asleep on the surface of the water ; and these are taken by sending out the boat with a good diver, who plunges into the water when some yards from the turtle, and rising almost under it, seizes it by the tail, which he pinches hard, the pain whereof moves the animal, who being awakened, strikes out his claws, whereby he keeps upon the surface of the water, supporting the diver at the same time. Green turtle is extreme wholesome food, the truth of which is evinced by the Centurion losing only two men during her run from Juan Fernandez to the bay of Aquetan, which engrossed a space of seven months ; during four whereof turtle was the only fresh provision the people had to command.

It may appear odd, but nevertheless it is true, that eating of turtle is forbid among the Spaniards, as unwholesome, nay as little less than poisonous ; a prejudice which has descended to their negroes and slaves, some of whom, who were on board the Centurion, thought the crew thereof mad for venturing upon food, the effects whereof had been represented to them in so very bad a light ; however, being at last tempted to partake, they grew fonder of it in time than any body else ; and ridiculed the caprice of their Spanish masters in reject-

ing such a delicacy; looking upon their knowledge of its goodness as a very important discovery: for those who are acquainted with this part of the world need not be told, that the wretched inhabitants know no blessing greater, than that of being always supplied with as much food as they can dispose of, and large draughts of spirituous liquors: from feeding sparingly upon this diet, they become ravenous in the consumption of it; and it was common to hear them felicitate each other upon being able to provide themselves such luxurious repasts upon their return home, to which the Spaniards could not but be strangers.

December 10th, a small bark with some salt and upwards of thirty pounds in money, fell into their hands off the island of Quibo: she was bound to Cheripe, an inconsiderable village on the continent, from whence the market of Panama is furnished with provisions every week; Cheripe is a place quite open to invasion, having no defence of any fort; and provisions being its staple commodity, future cruizers upon this coast may profit from the intelligence. On the 12th they stood from Quibo to the westward, having scuttled and sunk the last prize, and being joined by the Gloucester, which having sprung her fore top-mast, had been divided from them for some days; and now the commodore proceeded to cruize for the Manila ships, having first instructed his squadron to stretch to the northward of the harbour of Acapulco; and in case of separation, to rendezvous at the middle of the Tres Marias; and afterwards at the island of Macao, on the coast of China. They were harrassed with contrary winds from this time to the 9th of June, on which day the Manila ship reached the harbour of Acapulco, as they were informed by three negroes, whom the Centurion's barge surprized in a fishing canoe; which they afterwards turned

ed adrift among the rocks, that from its being dashed in pieces the Spaniards might infer the owners of it were drowned, and not impute their loss to the real cause.

This capture was made on the 17th of February, until which time all the sailors had indulged themselves with hopes, that the voyage of the Acapulco ship had been by some chance delayed; and at one time a little before this, they had chased a light all night long, which light they supposed to be carried by her as a signal to her concert, and made a clear ship, and all things ready for engaging; but the morning shewed it to be no more than a mountain within land, the stubble whereof had been set on fire; and the effect caused them to be thus deceived. However, to comfort them for the loss of the Manila ship this time, they were informed by their negro prisoners, that she having turned her cargo into ready money, was preparing again to put to sea, her departure being fixed to the $\frac{3}{4}$ of March, by edict of the vice-roy of Mexico.

By all the intelligence Mr. Anson could collect besides from these people, he inferred that the governor of Acapulco remained ignorant of an enemy's being so near at hand, and consequently that his chance for seizing the so much desired prize, was now greater than ever; and that she should not escape him at any rate, he disposed his five ships in such a manner, that they took up a sweep of twenty-four leagues at least, within which compass, nothing could pass, without its being known by the whole squadron; the vessels being so judiciously ranged, that they could easily and speedily be informed of what passed in any part of the line by signals. The better to prepare for the reception of the galeon, there were left on board the Carmin, the Carmelo, and the Tryal prize, no

more hands than were sufficient to navigate them, the rest being sent on board the Gloucester and Centurion, which two ships were intended for the attack: and as an encouragement to the negroes, they were promised their freedom in case of their deserving it by their good behaviour in the engagement.

At length the $\frac{3}{14}$ March, the day they had so long and eagerly expected, appeared, but to their great mortification, the evening thereof set in, without the least appearance of the galeon. From that day to the 23d of March old stile, they had hopes of her, as they were satisfied she had not quitted the harbour of Acapulco; and every man formed to himself reasons for her being detained: but now the whole fleet beginning to stand in need of water, it was agreed to make the best of their way to Seguataneio or Chequetan, there to take in a supply; and lest that the galeon might slip out to sea, taking advantage of their absence, Mr. Hughes, lieutenant of the Tryal's prize, was ordered to cruize off the harbour of Acapulco for twenty-four days in the cutter, that in case she should set sail, they might be speedily informed thereof.

April $\frac{1}{11}$, being pretty far advanced towards Chequetan, they dispatched two boats to range along the coast, in search of the watering-place: as they were absent four or five days, it was a great happiness, that during that time they had daily supply of turtle; for had they been reduced to their salt provisions, with so scanty an allowance of water as their present small stock afforded, they must have suffered considerably in this warm climate. The long absence of their boats began to fill them with many gloomy suggestions, which were at length happily dissipated by their return, with an account of their having met a proper watering-place seven miles

miles to the westward of the rocks of Seguetancio, which, by the description they gave, appeared to be the port of Chequetan, mentioned by Dampier. For this place the squadron immediately steered, and came to anchor on the 7th in the evening in eleven fathom water; but the Carmin and Carmelo having fallen to the leeward, the Tryal's prize was dispatched to bring them up, which task she performed in two or three days.

There is a beach of sand extending eighteen leagues from the harbour of Acapulco to the westward, against which the sea breaks so violently, that it is impossible for boats to land on any part of it; but there is good anchorage for shipping at a mile or two from the shore, during the fair season. The adjacent land is low, here and there interspersed with small eminences; whereon are watch-towers; it is well cultivated, covered with pleasant villages, and planted with trees, affording on every side a most agreeable prospect; but it is remarkable, and to my thinking odd, that this district, apparently the most pleasant, the best cultivated, and the most populous upon the whole coast, should be without the smallest kind of naval craft, either for fishing or amusement; there being neither boat nor canoe to be discerned near it: and as this deficiency cannot arise from the want of convenient landing-places, it is not improbable that the government have prohibited their use, to prevent smuggling.

To the westward of this beach lies the bay of Seguatancio or Chequetan, the entrance whereof is very exactly described by Mr. Walter, in his account of this voyage, because it is very hard to be traced, and of vast importance to such vessels as cruize in those seas. The watering-place here is a standing lake, derived from a small spring about a mile up the country; and the part of this lake that lay contiguous to the sea, being a little brackish, Mr.

Anson ordered his stock of water to be brought from the other extremity, where it was much better tasted. This lake did not appear to have any communication at this time with the sea; and as Dampier speaks of it as a large river, it is very likely that in the rainy season it overflows its banks, and lays the neighbouring country under water, in which situation it was perhaps seen by him.

From the promising aspect of the country, Mr. Anson entertained some hopes of cultivating a correspondence with the inhabitants, and procuring a store of provisions in exchange for such coarse merchandize as their prizes had afforded, which in his hands were of little worth, but to these people, at his manner of rating them, must have been extremely valuable.

For this purpose he dispatched a company of forty men well armed into the country, to try if they could find any village: these men having marched about five miles from the harbour, discovered two roads leading east and west, the latter whereof they chose; and marched all day, along a beaten track, where they often saw horse and mule dung, but no sign of inhabitants or village. On their entering indeed a large savannah, they had sight of a centinel well mounted, whose horse starting at the sight of their arms, bore off his master with vast speed, who dropped his hat and pistol in his flight; and tho' they pursued him for some time, he soon escaped, having the advantage of them by being on horseback. So that at length, being quite wearied out with their fatiguing march, and neither having found water to quench their thirst, nor any other refreshment, they were obliged to halt; and then resolved to return, some of them having fainted, and being obliged to the shoulders of their stronger comrades for support; whoever, they prudently erected poles in several places,

places, to which they affixed declarations in Spanish, inviting the people to come down to the ships to traffic, assuring them of safeguard and considerable profit; but this proceeding had not the desired effect. We should not forget here to observe that if they had pursued the western, instead of the eastern road, they would soon have come up with a Spanish village, as they were afterwards informed, that lay not more than two miles from the turning.

This disappointment made a sensible impression upon all the people; however, they contented themselves as well as they could with guanoes, of which they here found great plenty, and which by some people are reckoned fine food; and large pheasants, the flesh whereof was but indifferent, together with parrots, and some well tasted birds of a smaller size. Besides the hog-plum, the papah, a few small limes, and an ill flavoured, bitter antiscorbutic herb, called brook-lime, the soil afforded them scarcely a fruit or vegetable. The best that can be said of Chequetan, upon the whole, is, that it is the most secure harbour to be met in a vast extent of coast, yielding good store of wood and water, and at a sufficient distance from Acapulco, to shelter such cruizers as may have designs upon the valuable vessel to which that town sometimes gives its name. Moreover it is surrounded by wood, thro' which there is but one narrow pass cut into the country, which may be defended against all the strength the Spaniards can possibly muster, by a very small party; the bay furnishes plenty of fish, among which we may reckon soles, mullets, breams, cavallies, sea-eggs, lobsters, fiddle-fish, and the torpedo or numbing fish, so like the last that we have named, that it is only to be distinguished from it by a brown circular spot upon the center of its back. Whoever

happens to touch this fish, feels an instantaneous numbness diffuse itself thro' his whole body, but affecting more particularly the limb that was in contact with it; and the diminution of this numbness, Mr. Walter, from experience, affirms to be gradual, tho' some naturalists have assured us that it was sudden; and tho' a man touches it with a stick, he will find himself benumbed, as tho' he had laid his naked hand upon it; so forceful is the communication.

It was in this harbour that Lewis Leger the commodore's cook wandering into the woods, was taken prisoner by some Indians, who carried him to Acapulco, whence he was transmitted to Mexico; and being afterwards sent to Vera-Cruiz, was shipped for Old Spain; but the vessel touching at Lisbon, he made his escape to the house of the British consul, who procured him a passage to England; where he brought the first account of Mr. Anson's safety, which had for some time been a doubtful point. This man being a French roman catholic, was first thought to have deserted to the enemy with such intelligence as he could collect; a suspicion that in the end appeared to be very ill grounded; he was afterwards killed in a trifling quarrel, in a night-house in London. He had been severely used in his captivity, having been stripped stark naked, exposed to the scorching heat of the sun, which was almost intolerable, all the way from Chequetan to Acapulco; and the ill treatment he met with in a prison at Mexico, wherein he was kept closely confined, manifested the vast hatred the Spaniards harbour against all people who seek to disturb their quiet in the South Seas.

Altho' the enemy never appeared in sight during Mr. Anson's stay here, it was evident from different volumes of smoke, that large parties of them were encamped in the woods on every side of the harbour.

bour. Mr. Brett indeed in once coasting round it in a boat, accompanied only by sixteen men, saw three squadrons of horse well armed and accoutered; one of which formed upon the beach to which he made, as if to dispute his landing, firing at him several distant shots; but no sooner had Mr. Brett come near enough to bring his arms to bear upon them, but this gallant cavalry fled upon the first volley; one of the men that composed it falling, together with his horse, both or one of which being perhaps wounded, the other two squadrons kept aloof, and never moved to assist their companion, tho' they amounted to near two hundred, and were opposed only by sixteen men.

It now appearing upon a scrutiny, that they had not more hands than were necessary to man a fourth rate man of war; Mr. Anson, with the consent of his officers, resolved to scuttle and destroy the Tryal's prize, the Carmelo, and the Carmin, and to divide the richest part of their cargoes and their crews between the Centurion and Gloucester; which was accordingly done on the 28th of April, when the remaining ships of the squadron warped out of the harbour; leaving behind them a letter corked up in a bottle, and placed in a canoe fixed to a grapnel in the middle of the harbour, acquainting Mr. Hughes, to whom it was directed, that the commodore was returned to his station off Acapulco; that he intended to quit it in a few days, and return to the rest of his squadron, which continued cruising to the southward. This last article was inserted to deceive the Spaniards, in case, as it afterwards happened, the canoe should fall into their hands; as for Mr. Hughes, he knew the commodore had no squadron to join, nor yet any design of steering back to Peru; so that it could have had no effect upon him. The stormy season now coming on,

and it appearing plainly that the voyage of the Acapulco ships was laid aside for this year, Mr. Anson having no farther business in the American seas, resolved to steer for China, after having picked up his cutter, in search of which, he to no purpose cruized all along the coast, advancing even within three leagues of Acapulco, a town which he had formerly designed to have stormed; but was dissuaded therefrom by a consideration of his own weakness, and a comparative view of the strength and fortifications of the place. It was now May the 22d, when not having the least sign of Mr. Hughes or of the cutter, Mr. Anson imagined it might have been taken and carried into Acapulco; a loss which the commodore could not at this time rightly put up with, there being on board her some of the stoutest fellows that remained alive between the ships. Therefore taking the capture of them as a certainty, he wrote a very polite letter to the governor of Acapulco, requesting him to deliver them up, and in return, promising to release all the Spanish prisoners, now in his hands: among whom were some people of figure. This letter was sent off in a launch in the care of a Spanish officer, of whom the commodore had a good opinion, and who was conducted by six other prisoners, who gave their parole for their return. The governor of Acapulco returned a polite answer to the commodore's message, and sent him also two boats loaded with refreshments; but these never reached him, for before their setting out, the cutter happily came on board with the men almost starved, and scarcely able to stand; they were all straight put to bed, supplied with food from the commodore's table, and being otherwise taken proper care of, soon recovered their strength. It seems that, having finished their cruise before Acapulco, they plied to the westward in order to join

join the squadron, but were driven to the eastward by a strong current, wherewith they found it in vain to contend; and now their water being expended, they endeavoured to find out a convenient landing-place, where they might get a supply, but to no purpose, there being so large a surf for near eighty leagues, that they ran to leeward, and there was not the least possibility of their making the shore. The blood of the turtle that they caught upon the water, was for some days their only refreshment; and now beginning to despair of relief, there fell a violent shower of rain, the water of which, being catched in their sails, spread horizontally, with bullets placed in their center to draw them to a point, filled all their casks, and meeting almost at the same time a strong current in their favour, they joined the commodore in fifty hours, after an absence of forty-three days; a junction which must appear very surprizing to those who consider the many dangers that must certainly attend upon an open boat only twenty-two feet long, upon so terrible a coast, and such a tempestuous sea, during a six weeks cruize.

The commodore having now no farther business here, discharged all his prisoners, some few stout negroes excepted; they amounted to fifty-seven, and were furnished with two launches well equipped with masts, sails, and oars; and stocked with provision for fourteen days. They all came safely to Acapulco, where they talked loudly of Mr. Anson's politeness and humanity. May the 6th, the Centurion and Gloucester lost sight of the high mountains of Mexico, bound to the river Canton, where they hoped soon to enjoy the society of some of their countrymen, and the advantages of a port fraught with every conveniency, and inhabited by an amicable polished people.

C H A P. VII.

The Centurion and Gloucester both much damaged; the latter is destroyed; the former makes the Ladrões; anchors at Tinian; the Centurion drove out to sea, but happily gets back; sails to China and refits; she puts out to sea, and takes the Manila galeon; carries her to China; various occurrences till the quitting that coast; Mr. Anson's happy arrival at Spithead.

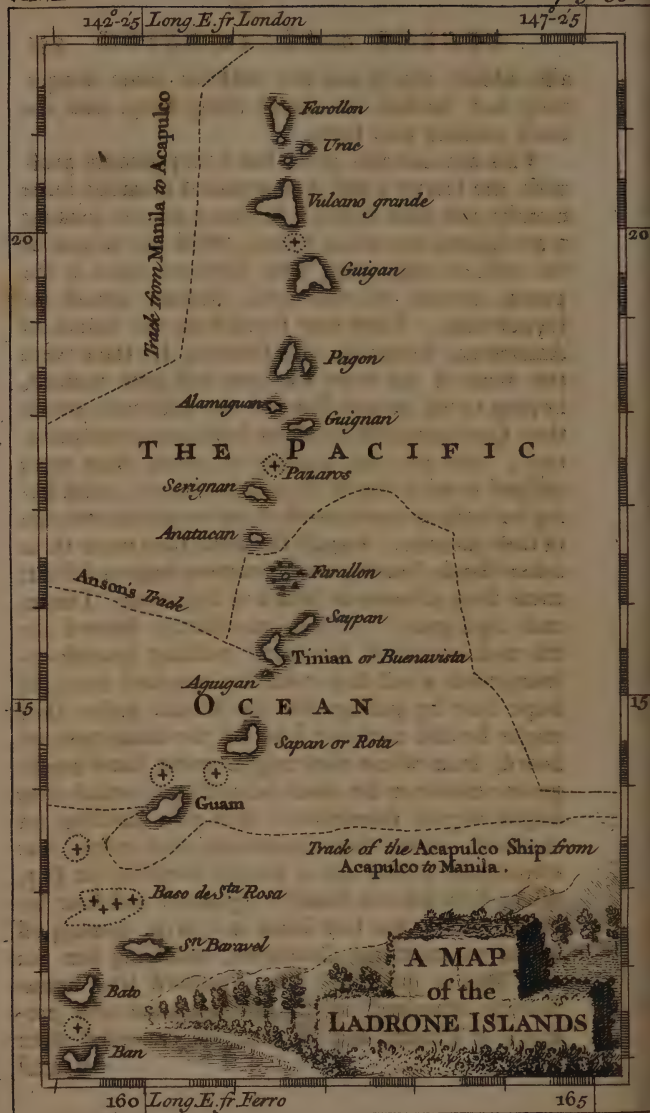
THE Centurion and the Gloucester being once again out at sea, stood over to the south-west, in hope of soon gaining the thirteenth or fourteenth degree of north latitude, a parallel in which the Pacific ocean is ofteneft crossed, as affording the safest navigation; they had also another view in this tack, which was that of coming up with the trade wind at north-east; but though they soon gained their first point, the latter was an expectation wherein they were entirely baffled by bad weather and contrary wind. It was the latter end of June before they fell in with the trade wind: at which time they had been seven weeks at sea, yet not made above one fourth of their run, though it was common to make the whole in less than two months. July the 26th, being then about three hundred leagues from the Ladrões, the wind came about to the west, and by continuing in that point four days, considerably retarded their progress; and in a few days after the Gloucester began to grow more crazy than ever; she had been one continued plague to the crew of the Centurion as well as her own people,

people, ever since they had quitted Chequetan, and now besides bringing her fore-top mast and main top-mast by the board, she had seven foot water in her hold ; it blew a hurricane from the west, and the Centurion herself at the same time sprung a leak, which required all the attendance both of officers and men to cure ; so that they could afford but little assistance to their mate. However, she sent her boat on board, which soon returned with a remon-
 stance, signed by captain Mitchel and all his officers, setting forth that the ship's leaks were irreparable ; that they had no spare masts to hoist in room of those that were destroyed ; that she was quite decayed in many places ; that her knees and clamps were loose ; and her upper works so crazy that the quarter-deck was ready to drop down ; that her crew were reduced to ninety-five men, including officers, and eighteen boys, besides two prisoners ; and that out of these only sixteen men and eleven boys were able to keep the deck, nor yet were these in the best state of health ; moreover their fresh water and provisions were covered over by the sea-water pouring in so fast upon them, below deck, there was no coming at refreshment. As it was a little calm, the commodore ordered them a boat load of water and provisions, and at the same time desired his own men to examine into the truth of the state of her case, which they reporting not to have been at all exaggerated, the commodore gave orders that captain Mitchel should send all his hands on board the Centurion ; and having saved what stores he was able, to destroy her. In about two days they discharged her of such stores as they could most easily arrive at, and it was with difficulty they saved the money she had taken in the South-seas ; but most of the prize goods, which
 were

were very valuable, and belonged to the Centurion, were forced to be abandoned ; of her provisions only five casks of flour could be preserved, three of which were damaged by the salt-water : and though the Gloucester's sick men, amounting to seventy, were put on board the Centurion with as much care and tenderness as circumstances could admit, three or four of them expired in the very action of being hoisted up. August the 15th having taken out of her every thing proposed, she was set on fire, and continued burning all night, the flames gaining upon her gradually, and her guns going off one by one, till at length about one o'clock in the morning, she blew up with a small report, four leagues a-head of the Centurion, and a black pillar of smoke arising from the blast, shot up to a considerable height in the air.

Thus was Mr. Anson reduced to one ship, where-with he hoped to have some better success than he had lately found, being no longer clogged with any embarrassments that might contribute to his delay. In two or three days after the Gloucester was burned, the carpenter luckily found the Centurion's leak, which he could not absolutely stop without getting at the outside of the ship ; a task at present impossible : however, he patched it up pretty well ; it was under the breast-hook on each side of the stem, in the gunner's fore store-room. August the 23d they discovered two islands to the westward, and soon after a third ; a sight whence they derived fresh spirits, as they stood in vast need of repair. The boat was dispatched to one of them, which returned with an account that they could find no anchoring ground for ships ; that they had been on shore, where they saw abundance of coco-nut trees, but neither water nor inhabitants ; they

also



also added, that it was not without some danger they had landed, the beach being steep, and the swell running very high.

This account gave them but a very gloomy prospect, the scurvy which had attended them for three months past with as much virulence as ever, making a prodigious havock on board, while the fatigue of the officers and men, who laboured hard at the pump, because of the leak, became almost insupportable. They now stood from the islands of Annatacan, Serignan, and Pazaros, for these were the name of the three we have just now noticed, hoping to fall in with some of the Ladrones, which they knew could afford them sufficient accommodation; but for the making of them they were obliged to trust almost entirely to chance; there being no body on board who had any certain knowledge of their identity. August the 26th they made three other islands, bearing about fourteen leagues distant; these they afterwards found to be Saypan, Tinian, and Aguinan. They immediately steered for the middlemost of the three, hoisting Spanish colours, with a red flag at the fore-top mast head, in hope that by passing for the Manila galley they might be able to decoy some of the inhabitants on board, from whom they might receive some intelligence relative to the place, according to which they might deport themselves. And now standing for the land, under this appearance, the cutter was dispatched to find out a proper birth for the ship, which soon sent on board a Spaniard and four Indians, which she had seized in a proa, coming off shore, to meet the Centurion, mistaking her for the Manila galeon. The Spaniard was immediately examined as to the condition and products of Tinian, and his answers exceeded their warmest

warmest hopes. He assured them that there were no inhabitants on the island, except twenty-two Indians, who were there occasionally jerking beef, which, when loaded on board a small bark of fifteen tons burthen, then lying at anchor near shore, was to be sent to the garrison at Guam, whereof he was a serjeant; he also reported, that the island abounded with coco-nuts, lemons, limes, oranges, sweet and sour together, with various other fruits, particularly the bread fruit*, that hogs, poultry, and black cattle, ran wild upon it; that the soil was rich, plentifully and beautifully watered, and the air good.

As they came closer in with the land, the prospect thereof indicated, if possible, something desirable, even beyond the serjeant's description; it wore rather the air of an elegant plantation than an uninhabited island: the verdant lawns, the sloping hills, the purling streams, and tall aspiring trees, looked like the disposition of art and ingenuity, and had an effect agreeably surprising. The Commodore having ordered the pinnace and cutter ashore, with some men well-armed to seize the bark, and, if possible, the Indians, ordered the anchor to be let go in twenty-two fathom, and the ship to lie by for that night with her sails furled, that her hands might gain some repose; for out of one thousand men he had brought from England, he could muster but seventy-one, and those too so weak and infirm, they were scarce able to stand to a gun. This diminution of their number was owing to the havock made amongst them by the scurvy, which had raged terribly on board ever since they left Chequetan, all

* See a description of the bread fruit in the 79th page of the sixth volume of these Voyages.

the surgeon's efforts to stop its progress being ineffectual; nor know we to what to attribute its prevalence, as the whole ship's crew were during the whole run, plentifully supplied with fresh provisions and good water, but to the apt disposition of the blood, already broken with fatigue and disorder, to infection, and by remembering that the steam of the ocean, when corrected by no terrestrial particles, encourages it prodigiously; and this latter is confirmed by the land-air soon restoring to health those whose constitutions are not entirely decayed. In the morning a large party of men were sent on shore to erect tents, and prepare quarters for the sick; the former was a piece of trouble that the Indians had saved them, by building huts for their own shelter, the largest whereof being twenty feet long and fifteen broad, was immediately fitted up as an hospital, to which the sick, amounting to one hundred and eighty-one, were brought with all possible expedition; and most of these were soon recovered by the salubrity of the climate, and the products of the island, happily adapted to restore the sick.

Tinian lies in fifteen degrees eight minutes north latitude: it is one of the Ladrões, which, reckoned altogether, great and small, are about twenty in number. It abounds with herds of cattle, which are milk-white, their ears excepted, which are black; they may be easily run down, and so caught without expence of powder and shot: here are wild hogs, which must be baited by dogs; they make a good battle, but the noise made by the various sorts of domestic poultry, which are delicious food, gives the place vastly the air of an inhabited farm. It is certain that this island was formerly well-peopled, but a contagious sickness having swept
away

away almost all the inhabitants of Guam, Rota, and Tinian, the Spaniards forced those who survived on the two last, to remove to the first, where they had fixed their principal government; but few of them outlived the change.

In many parts of Tinian are found a particular kind of ruins, being pyramidical pillars disposed in two rows: their height is thirteen feet, and their base five feet square; on the top of each pillar is a solid semi-globe with the flat surface upwards; these pillars are a cement of brick and sand plaistered over, placed at six feet distance one from the other; there being a space of twelve feet between each row. These are the remains of buildings formerly adapted to religious uses, according to the report of the four Indian prisoners. Large flights of ducks, curlew, and the whistling plover, were seen about two or three pieces of fine standing water, that contribute greatly to the beauty of the landscape. The soil in general is dry and sandy, yielding plenty of fine fruit and wholesome vegetatives, and not disposed to push out rank luxuriant weeds; wherefore the turf is generally smooth and uniform, and the woods not being choaked with brambles, present many most delightful vistas. The climate is frequently refreshed with short light showers, and the wholesome breezes which continually fan the air, sharpens the stomach in such a manner, that the Centurion's people found themselves enabled, nay, necessitated to eat three times more than usual, nor yet were they disordered by the repletion.

The greatest inconvenience of these islands, were the number of muskettoes, and other small flies, which were very incommoding, but more particularly an insect called the tick, which darting its head
under

under the skin of him whom it assails, raises a most painful inflammation. The anchoring-place, for there is but one, lies on the south-west side of the island; nor does it afford shelter sufficient against the western monsoons, when about the full and change of the moon, for then the wind veering to every point of the compass, blows with such impetuosity that the stoutest cables are not proof against its force; and this was sufficiently experienced by the Centurion, which, notwithstanding all the care that had been taken to make her fast, was forced from her anchors and drove out to sea, with such of the men as had well recovered, under the command of lieutenant Saumarez; the commodore, who was himself sick of the scurvy, being at that time ashore, together with one hundred and thirteen of his people. It was very well that her leak had been searched out, and in some measure stopped, before this accident happened, or the consequences might have been much more than they proved to be. This misfortune fell out upon the 22d of September, in a night of excessive darkness, the ship having her sheet-anchor hanging at one of her cables, her shrouds loose, her top-masts unrigged, her fore and main yards down, and not a gun lashed on board, nor a port-hole barred in. She laboured for nineteen days before she could regain her birth, of which she entirely despaired, having only one hundred and eight of her hands on board, negroes and Indians included. The grief of the men she left ashore is inexpressible; however, giving her up for lost, they set about enlarging the Spanish bark, determining in her to steer for Macao. This resolution was put in their heads by the commodore, who worked as hard in endeavouring to fit out this little vessel as the meanest of his men. However, on the 11th of October, Mr. Gordon, a lieutenant of marines, brought them a reprieve from their fatiguing labour,

labour, by being the first to tell them that the ship was once again in sight. This news being soon confirmed by her appearing in the offing, a boat with eighteen hands, and a large quantity of refreshments, was immediately sent off to her assistance, and the following afternoon she was happily brought to safe anchorage in the road, where the commodore now determined to stay no longer than was necessary to compleat their stock of water. On the 14th she was drove out to sea again, leaving about seventy of her hands a-shore; however, she made the island again on the 19th, when all hands being ordered on board, with such a supply of water, fruits, and refreshments as they could suddenly collect, they got under sail, steering for Macao in China.

It was now the 21st of October, and the eastern monsoon being settled, and blowing right astern, they went at the rate of forty or fifty leagues a day; tho' as the ship worked greatly, and her leaks required that the pumps should be kept constantly going, the people were very much fatigued; nevertheless they made no complaint, being in pretty good health. November the 9th they made the main land of China, and not rightly knowing their course, lay by for that night, and in the morning were agreeably surprized to find themselves surrounded by fishing-boats, which spread over the sea beyond the utmost stretch of the eye; and tho' there were three or five men on board every one of them, the commodore could not by signs, by pronouncing the word Macao, nor by shewing a quantity of dollars, induce any one of them to come on board and pilot him; for the inattention they seemed to pay to every thing but their employment is almost incredible.

On the 16th, Mr. Anson perceiving a boat a-head blow a horn and wave a red flag, looked upon it as

a signal of some sort intended for him ; but in this he found himself mistaken, it being a signal displayed by the commodore of the fishery, to order all the boats to leave fishing and retire to shore, which they all obeyed quickly. It was a little vexatious to them not to be able to get a pilot amidst so many naval people ; however, they continued their course thro' many guts formed by small islands and little rocks, following the best instructions of former navigators, for there was no body in the *Centurion* who knew any thing of the coast. About four in the morning of the 9th, a Chinese pilot put on board, and told them, in broken Portuguese, that for thirty dollars he would carry the ship into Macao ; which being paid him, they proceeded in their course : and now as they went pilots encreased upon them, soliciting employment, and producing certificates of their abilities, signed by many European captains. About ten o'clock in the morning of the 12th they came to the harbour of Macao, a small island lying at the mouth of the river Canton, in the hands of the Portuguese, who have a governor here, so very trifling in estimation that he is subservient entirely to the mandarine, or neighbouring Chinese governor, who sends him and his garrison their daily allowance of provision ; so that upon the least dislike it is in the power of this superintendant to starve and dispossess them. Mr. Anson, being determined to support the honour of the British flag, was resolved not to submit to the payment of the duties exacted by the Chinese from trading vessels ; men of war having immunities of that nature in every civilized port. For this reason the Portuguese governor of Macao advised him not to enter the river Canton, where the usual demand would certainly be made upon him, but rather to heave down and careen at Typa, an obscure but safe harbour, formed by a number of islands, about six miles from

Macao :

Macao : and if Mr. Anson readily acquiesced to this instruction, it was because he feared involving the European ships in the dispute that must have certainly arisen from his refusing to comply with this custom, which it was probable would never be demanded of him at Typa. His tenderness for the merchants led him to consult with them the manner in which it was necessary for him to address the viceroy of Canton, for a supply of provisions and hands to assist him in heaving down his ship. They referred him to some Chinese agents, who, after having cajoled him from day to day with promises of laying the state of his account before the viceroy, and settling matters in his favour, at length, when he had lost more than a month in expectation, they fairly threw off the mask, and being pressed, declared they neither would address the viceroy, nor did they dare to do it, he being too great a man for them to pretend to approach. He now perceived too late that he had been wrong in consulting so much the interest of the East India company, and immediately wrote a letter to the viceroy, setting forth that he was commander in chief of a squadron of British ships of war which had been cruising upon the Spaniards, with whom the king his master was at variance, in the South Seas, upwards of two years ; that his ship was obliged to put in here to stop a leak, and supply herself with provisions and necessaries ; in all which wants he craved his excellency's assistance.

The hoppo, or chief officer of the customs, at first refused to take charge of this letter ; but finding that the commodore was determined upon sending it, and resented the refusal, he begged to be entrusted with it ; and in a day or two after, a mandarine of the first rank, with two of an inferior class, came alongside of the Centurion, with a very numerous train of attendants and a good band of music.

music. The Centurion's boat was sent to bring the principal mandarine on board. He was governor of the city of Janfon, and to all appearance a man of good sense and more integrity than the Chinese are generally allowed to be. He brought with him two carpenters, who examined the state of the ship very carefully, but were particularly exact in viewing the leak. He appeared much surprized at the weight and size of the Centurion's cannon, for a ship of such force was perhaps what had never been seen in this part of the world before; nor did Mr. Anson neglect to make a proper use of his admiration, which it was plain was not without its mixture of terror. He expatiated upon the strength of his vessel, and observed that there could not be a stronger indication of his mildness than his thus civilly requesting such necessaries as he stood in need of, when it was plain that he was sufficiently powerful to have taken them by force: at the same time he desired that orders might be given for a daily supply of provision to be put on board him, otherwise his men might be reduced to the necessity of turning canibals, and feeding on human flesh; an extremity in which they certainly would prefer the plump Chinese to the flesh of their own emaciated messmates. This discourse had its desired effect; the mandarine allowed the truth of every thing Mr. Anson advanced, promised he should have every necessary assistance as soon as the state of his circumstances had been considered by a council of mandarines at Canton, which being but matter of form, should be done directly: in the mean time he ordered one of his attendants to see a certain quantity of provisions, specified in writing by Mr. Anson, put every day on board the Centurion; and this injunction was exactly complied with. Preliminaries being properly adjusted, the commodore gave them

an entertainment, at which they made but an awkward figure, not knowing in what manner to use the knives and forks that were laid before them; so that to ease them, one of the commodore's attendants cut their meat for them in bits. They expressed a strong dislike to beef, which was one of the dishes, founded perhaps upon a superstition that prevails much among the pagans of India. However they might flinch at the meat, which they did not seem greatly to relish, they stuck close to the liquor; and the mandarine, having helped to dispatch four or five bottles of frontinac and one of citron-water, departed without seeming in the least affected therewith, having received a handsome present, as is the custom of China. Several days elapsed after this conference, without its producing any effect whatsoever; however, the commodore understood that this delay was occasioned by the intrigues of a Frenchman, who endeavoured underhand to postpone as much as possible Mr. Anson's affairs, fearing that in case the Centurion should be allowed any particular distinction, as bearing the king of Great Britain's commission, the French traders would lose part of their consideration, having always pretended to be ships of war.

At length, on the 6th of January, after great debates in the council of Cantón, the governor of Janfon sent down the viceroy of Canton's warrant for refitting the Centurion, and supplying all her wants; in consequence of which warrant several smiths and carpenters immediately came on board to offer their service: of each a sufficient number was immediately retained; none of whom could be persuaded to work by the day; but the carpenters agreed to do every thing that was wanting to the ship, and to set her all to rights, for six hundred pounds; at first they had demanded a thousand:

the

the smiths also bargained to furnish small iron work at three pounds per hundred, and the large at two pounds six and six pence. Two proper vessels, called junks in this country, having been provided for that purpose, the ship was immediately hove down; and as the Chinese work but slowly, tho' with great ingenuity and certainty, it was the beginning of April before she was fitted for sea; during which time the Chinese pressed her departure very much, seeming to care very little for such a powerful company; powerful in appearance to wretches who are naturally poor spirited and timid, yet in reality very far from being so when the weakness of the ship's company is considered, tho' it was there reinforced with twenty-three Lascars, or Indian sailors, and a few Dutch, to the amount of twenty-three.

April the 6th, the Centurion weighed from Typa, warping to the south; on the 15th she got into the Macao road, taking in her water as she passed along; and on the 19th, all her business being compleated, she stood out to sea. The people of Canton and Macao firmly believing Mr. Anson would endeavour to make Batavia, and thence proceed to England, in spite of the western monsoon, which was set in. By this insinuation his real design was kept concealed, which was to cruize off the Philippine Islands for the Manila galeon, it generally touching in the month of June at Cape Spiritu Santo, on the island of Samal, that being the first land it makes; and there being great probability that there would this year be two Manila ships instead of one, the news of the Centurion being upon the coast having hindered the ship of the preceding year from making her voyage. When they were out of sight of land, the commodore ordered all his people upon the quarter-deck, and unfolded his intention to them in a short pathetic speech, which had a vast effect,

effect, and persuaded them so strongly that the galeon would become their prize, that when the commodore enquired of the butcher why he had seen no mutton at his table for some days past, the fellow seriously answered, There were but two sheep alive, and he hoped his honour would not be angry, if he kept those to entertain the general of the galeon.

It was the last day of May new stile before they came in sight of Cape Spiritu Santo, where they continued to cruize till the 20th of June old stile, when the vessel which they had so long expected came in sight about sun-rise, having the standard of Spain flying at the top-gallant-mast-head, and to the commodore's great surprize she bore down upon him as if resolved to engage him, which he had not expected. The engagement began soon after, and lasted near an hour and a half, when the galeon struck her colours, having had sixty-seven men killed in the action, and eighty-four wounded; among whom was the general or admiral Don Jeronimo de Montero, a Portuguese gentleman, who acted with great bravery, and almost wept for shame when he discovered the insignificant force that had subdued him. On board the Centurion two men were killed, and seventeen, among whom was a lieutenant, wounded. The great slaughter on board the galeon was chiefly owing to thirty choice fellows who were distributed among the tops before the engagement with small arms; and most of them having been long practising how to shoot at marks, did some execution with every shot they fired. Mr. Anson himself was every where present in the engagement, acting with his usual spirit and recollection; and the honourable Mr. Kepple attended to distribute his orders between decks with great resolution.

This prize was named *Nostra Signora de Cabadonga*; she carried five hundred and fifty men, had thirty-

six guns mounted for action, besides twenty-eight pateraroes, each of which was adapted to bear a four pound ball: her cargoe was worth four hundred thousand pounds sterling. The other galeon had sailed much sooner than usual, and very probably had reached Manila long before the Centurion arrived off Cape Spiritu Santo. The commodore immediately appointed his prize a post ship in his majesty's service, under the command of Mr. Saumarez, first lieutenant of the Centurion; and having taken proper measures for securing the prisoners, which were double his number of men, he steered back for the river of Canton, and on the 12th of July came to anchor once more off the city of Macao. Soon after their arrival here they were visited by a customhouse officer; who upon taking an inventory of the guns, ammunition, and men on board, seemed vastly surprized at the mention of four hundred firelocks and near as many barrels of powder, adding that he dared not set down such force, lest the regency should be alarmed, for that no ships so armed had ever entered China before.

A few days being elapsed, in which Mr. Anson brought his ships farther up the river, he dispatched his second lieutenant to Canton, with a letter to the viceroy, requesting a proper supply of provisions, and proposing to pay his excellency a visit. A message in answer to this letter, was brought by three mandarines, granting the necessary supply of provisions; entreating him to postpone his visit till the weather should become more moderate; and requesting as a favour that the Spanish prisoners should be set at liberty; lest the emperor, coming to the knowledge of his allies being in confinement, in his dominions, should resent it; and at the same time observing that a compliance with this request, would be considered as great favour conferred upon his excellency.

Mr. Anson consented to restore them to their liberty, after some hesitation, made on purpose to enhance the obligation; but when the mandarines came to talk of the duties usually paid by ships, Mr. Anson cut them short, by positively declaring that he would not submit to pay any, this ordinance relating only to trading vessels; and as he neither intended to buy or sell, he did not imagine the emperor's orders could possibly affect him. The prisoners were soon after put on board two junks sent from Canton for that purpose; and the report they made of the humanity of Mr. Anson, who was glad to get rid of them, wrought very powerfully in his favour among the Chinese. It would be an endless task should we undertake to enumerate the many artifices, frauds and extortions practised by this interested race upon the commodore and his people, from his coming into the river Canton in July to the 13th of October, when being disappointed of a quantity of biscuit, and other provisions that had been promised him, as well as amused with numberless false stories, he determined in person to visit the viceroy at his capital, taking such effectual measures for securing the Centurion and her vast wealth from the machinations of these treacherous and lucrative people, that they did not dare, during his absence, to contrive any thing that could tend to his disturbance.

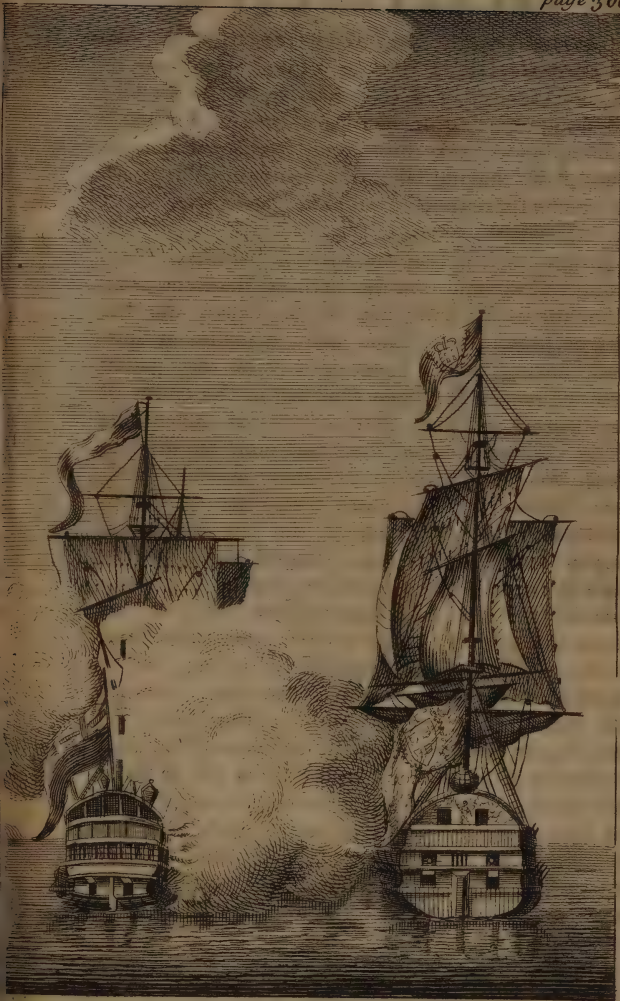
Leaving captain Brett to command the vessel, he embarked on board his own boat for Canton, rowed by eighteen of his hands dressed uniformly in scarlet jackets, blue silk waistcoats, caps of the same stuff trimmed with silver buttons, and silver badges: he was attended by the supercargoes of the English, Swedish and Danish ships, and, besides his own, the boats of all the trading vessels; so that his retinue had a very grand appearance. In his passage he was saluted by all the European ships then lying in Wampo,

Wampo, their usual place of mooring, the French excepted. Mr. Anson had not been long at Canton before he saw his bread and other provisions, for which he had bargained and paid indeed before hand, in great forwardness; and as he was upon the spot, took proper measures for obviating the delays which the contractors would otherwise have made. While he remained in this city a fire broke out, which would have certainly proved the destruction of the whole place, had not Mr. Anson's men exerted themselves greatly in suppressing, and at length extinguished it; for which service he received the thanks of the chief merchants and principal people of Canton. The awkwardness and ignorance of the Chinese in their endeavours to put it out is very surprising, if we consider the vast character given of their ingenuity, wit and abilities by the jesuits; a character to which they are very unequal, according to the accounts we have of this expedition.

November 30 being at length appointed for Mr. Anson's visit to the viceroy, he was attended from the outer gate of the city to the parade before the imperial palace wherein the viceroy resided, by a guard of two hundred soldiers; and in the parade he found a body of at least one thousand men under arms, newly cloathed upon this occasion. The reception the commodore met with was very polite: a seat was appointed for him near the viceroy's own person, who thanked him for the assistance his people had afforded at the fire, granted the order for putting his provisions on board, and did not once mention a word of the duties exacted usually from ships. This conference gave the commodore vast satisfaction; so that his provisions being now ready to be supplied, and the licence for that purpose obtained, he had nothing to detain him longer in China, except the sale of his prize, which he disposed of to some merchants at Macao for six thousand dollars.

dollars, which was a prodigious cheap price; but the purchasers knew that he wanted to get out to sea, and therefore took the advantage of his pressing situation; it being his intention to reach Europe if possible before any ships could carry thither the news of his having taken the Acapulco ship, and the enemy thereupon be prepared to deprive him of her vast wealth.

He got under sail on the 15th of October, 1743, bound to England: on the 11th of March he came to anchor in the table bay of the Cape; and the 15th of June, 1744, came safely to anchor at Spithead, having, under cover of a thick fog, passed thro' a French fleet then cruising in the chops of the Channel. Thus, after a series of adventures which continued three years and nine months, in which Mr. Anson experienced many strokes of adverse fortune, and was more than once to all appearance ruined and undone, did this expedition happily conclude; having damaged the crown of Spain to the amount of more than a million sterling, if we include the destruction of Pizarro's squadron, which was certainly owing to its having been fitted out as a spy upon the motions of our gallant, and at length fortunate, commander: and it may be truly said, had his spirit of prudence and intrepidity, his love of glory and his country, influenced the commanders of several other expeditions in our late war with Spain; Great Britain's sovereignty over the sea had been more universally acknowledged, and her triumphant flags waved over many an hostile territory in America that now haughtily frowns defiance on her arms.



A View of the Centurion, taking the Acaapulco Ship, off Cape Spiritu Santo, on Samal one of the Philippine Islands.

